This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Through new guinea and the cannibal countries

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THROUGH NEW GUINEA AND THE CANNIBAL COUNTRIES

Digitized by Google

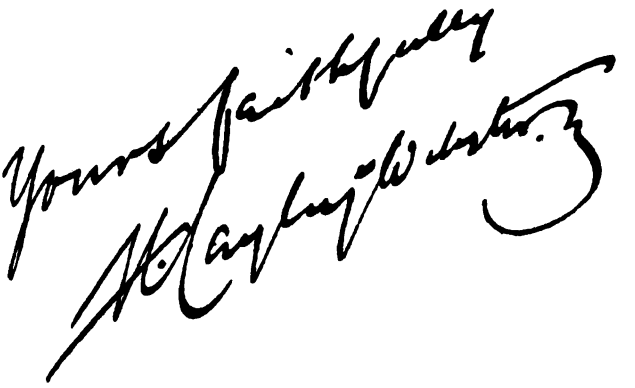
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Hydrog... Amt-Bibliot... K.u.k. Kriegs Mar...

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Through New Guinea and the Cannibal Countries

By H. Cayley-Webster + +

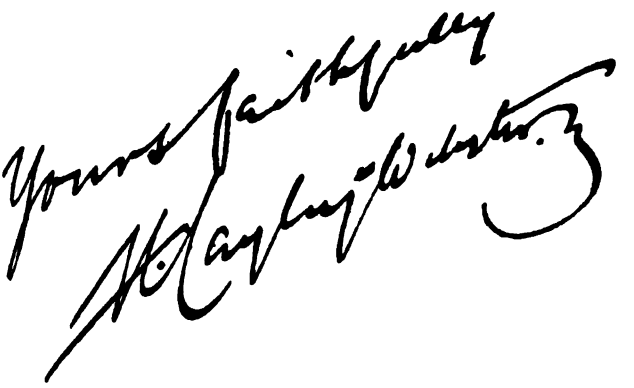
12298

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAP

Type of Native.

LONDON : T. FISHER UNWIN
PATERNOSTER SQUARE. 1898

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

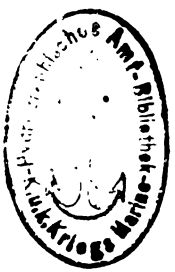
Through New Guinea and the Cannibal Countries

By H. Cayley-Webster + +

12298

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAP

Type of Native.



LONDON : T. FISHER UNWIN
PATERNOSTER SQUARE. 1898

Digitized by Google

(*All rights reserved.*)

Digitized by Google

DJ
740
W37

TO

THE HONBLE. WALTER ROTHSCHILD.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

WITHIN the pages of the following book I have endeavoured to describe, from my own personal observations, the manners and customs of inhabitants of the various countries I visited and passed through, who are almost entirely unknown to the European. In the interior of German New Guinea I traversed a greater distance on foot than any white man has done before or since, and on that expedition I discovered the non-existence of a range of mountains previously marked on the chart.

In a paper read before the Royal Geographical Society I explained some of the great difficulties and dangers one has to overcome and pass through before such material work can be accomplished. But in this book I have written a fuller account of that journey, as well as that of a later cruise extending over a period of three years.

The Appendix has been very kindly added by my friends, the Honourable Walter Rothschild, Dr. Hartert, and Dr. Jordan, of Tring, whom I have also to thank for so much other assistance rendered to me during my travels.

The majority of illustrations are from photographs taken by myself, but for the few which were not I am indebted to Richard Parkinson, of Ralum, and other gentlemen with whom I met, and who kindly presented

Digitized by Google

them at a time when I was either without plates, or those I had were useless owing to the severity of the climate.

It now only remains to be said that if my patient reader will bear with me to the end, I shall indeed be grateful, and shall consider that my shortcomings have been indulgently overlooked, and that my task has been thoroughly successful. For the rest, allow me to thank all those who so kindly assisted me during my expeditions, but whose names I have not been able to individually mention here, and I hope the day may come when I shall be permitted to return, in some way, the many kindnesses I received at the hands of those whom it was my good fortune to meet during my travels in the Eastern Hemisphere.

OSTEND, *August* 11, 1898.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

THE FIRST EXPEDITION—THE START—ARRIVAL AT SINGAPORE- THE PALACE OF H.H. SULTAN OF JOHORE—THE TOWN OF JOHORE . 1

CHAPTER II.

WEDDING OF THE CROWN PRINCE, THE PRESENT REIGNING SULTAN 7

CHAPTER III.

ON BOARD THE NORTH GERMAN LLOYD STEAMER "LUBECK"—JAVANESE LABOUR COOLIES—GAMBLING ON BOARD—ARRIVAL IN NEW GUINEA—HEAD-QUARTERS OF THE ASTROLABE BAY COMPANY—SIMBANG MISSION STATION—A NATIVE VILLAGE—NATIVES—A JOURNEY UP THE SADDLEBERG 19

CHAPTER IV.

DEATH OF AN OFFICIAL—NATIVES CARRY HIS EXCELLENCY'S PIANO—THE START FOR THE INTERIOR 33

CHAPTER V.

WE BID GOODBYE TO HIS EXCELLENCY THE GOVERNOR—ASTONISHED NATIVES—ANGRY NATIVES—WE SHOOT SOME PARADISE BIRDS—ONE OF OUR MEN CATCHES A STRANGE MAMMAL—AM ATTACKED WITH RHEUMATIC FEVER 36

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

PAGE

WE FELL A TREE TO CROSS THE RIVER—ARE MET BY A FEW NATIVES: THEY SPEAK THE BOKAJIM DIALECT—SOURCE OF THE RIVER MINJEM—A LABORIOUS ASCENT—ARE OBLIGED TO CUT OUR WAY—THE SUMMIT—NO BISMARCK MOUNTAINS—CANNOT FIND NATIVES—BAD WATER—WE START ON THE RETURN JOURNEY 43

CHAPTER VII.

THE DESCENT—ONE MAN DIES—PHOTOGRAPH OF THE SOURCE OF THE RIVER—A GOOD DAY'S MARCH—WE SEND TO DUMBU FOR FOOD—HARDLY ANY OBTAINABLE—HOSTILE NATIVES—THE LOVE OF RED PAINT—DUMBU VILLAGE—A NARROW ESCAPE—WE SHOOT A WILD BOAR—DISSATISFIED NATIVES—ATTACKED BY NATIVES—WE KILL ONE MAN IN THE ACT OF DRAWING HIS BOW—ARRIVE BACK ON THE COAST—SEVERE ATTACK OF FEVER—RETURN TO FREDERICHWILHELMSHAFEN—WITNESS A CHRISTENING—A NATIVE DANCE—NATIVE FEAST—TASTY MORSELS—WE BID FAREWELL 49

CHAPTER VIII.

NEW BRITAIN—THE IMPERIAL JUDGE TAKEN FOR A PUBLICAN—HERBERTSÖH—RALUM—THE PLANTATIONS OF MRS. KOLBE—CANNIBALISM—THRILLING ESCAPE—NATIVE DANCE—ARRIVAL OF THE MAN-OF-WAR—DESTRUCTION OF NATIVE VILLAGES—A CLEVER NATIVE—A BULLET-PROOF OINTMENT—MORE DEVICES FOR RAISING THE WIND—NATIVE MARKET 63

CHAPTER IX.

BISHOP COUPÉ—ROMAN CATHOLIC MISSION—FAREWELL TO NEW BRITAIN—AN ILL-FATED EXPEDITION—ON THE WAY TO THE SOLOMON ISLANDS—ARRIVE AT RUBIANA—SUICIDE OF A NATIVE GIRL—MURDER OF A TRADER—THE TRADERS—A VISIT FROM INGOVA, THE GREATEST CHIEF IN NEW GEORGIA—A TRIP UP THE RUBIANA LAGOON—MEET WITH UNFRIENDLY NATIVES—PHOTOGRAPHY UNDER DIFFICULTIES 97

CHAPTER X.

THE FATE OF THE "ESPERANZA"—PREPARING FOR A DEATH FEAST—SOLOMON ISLAND WAR CANOES—A HOUSE OF SKULLS—WE VISIT THE ISLAND OF YSABEL—HOSPITABLE NATIVES—NATIVES WHO BUILD THEIR HOUSES ON TREE-TOPS 119

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

PAGE

DISCOVERY OF THE SOLOMON ISLANDS—NATIVE TYPES—MURDERS—MANY ENGLISHMEN KILLED 134

CHAPTER XII.

VOYAGE TO SHORTLAND—I BREED THE ORNITHOPTERA—NARROW ESCAPE FROM THE NATIVES—VOYAGE TO SYDNEY—HOME . 141

PART II.

CHAPTER I.

ARRIVAL IN JAVA—BATAVIA—THE VICTORY OF THE DUTCH AT WATERLOO—BEAUTIFUL BUITENZORG—THE BOTANICAL GARDENS—PALACE OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL—A TEA ESTATE—A ZOOLOGICAL COLLECTION—MY VISIT TO A HEALTH RESORT—A NATIVE THEATRE 144

CHAPTER II.

NATIVES ARE UNWILLING TO ACCOMPANY ME—WE TAKE ON BOARD DYNAMITE—JAVA A TROPICAL GARDEN—THE BEAUTIFUL WOMEN OF BALI—RUINS OF HINDOO TEMPLES—LOMBOK—PALACE OF THE LATE SULTAN—THE LOMBOK WAR—DEFEAT OF THE DUTCH—THE SUTTEE: SELF-SACRIFICING WOMEN—MACASSAR—EXCITABLE NATIVES—STORY OF TWO MEN WITH ONE WIFE 156

CHAPTER III.

I ARRIVE AT AMBOYNA—COSTUMES OF THE NATIVES—GREAT DESTRUCTION BY EARTHQUAKE—THE RESIDENCY—I ENGAGE SOME HUNTERS—NATIVE FONDNESS FOR LAW—BANDA—THE GARDEN OF MOLUCCAS—NUTMEG PLANTATIONS—AN ANCIENT PORTUGUESE FORT—ARRIVAL IN NEW GUINEA—MURDER OF A MISSIONARY—I DEPART FOR THE KEI ISLANDS . . . 167

CHAPTER IV.

ARRIVE AT TOEAL, KEI ISLANDS—I OCCUPY THE PRISON—INTERVIEW THE RESIDENT—LAZY NATIVES—I BREED QUANTITIES OF THE ORNITHOPTERA PEGASUS—AN ABUNDANCE OF FISH . . . 176

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

PAGE

DEPART FOR ARU—ARRIVAL AT DOBBO—CHEAP STORES—I SHOOT SOME DEER—I ENGAGE SOME HUNTERS—A SCURVY TRICK—I MOVE ON TO MAYKROR—WE RUN ON TO A REEF—THE MURDER OF A CHINESE TRADER—MY HUNTERS DESERT ME—THE CHIEF STEALS MY CIGARS—I PURCHASE A LIVE PARADISE BIRD 195

CHAPTER VI.

RETURN TO DOBBO—A GAY SEASON—THE ARRIVAL OF THE STEAMER—COCK FIGHTING—A NATIVE BURIAL GROUND—NATIVE LEGENDS—A DEAD CHIEF—A LOATHSOME CEREMONY—MY STEWARD MUTINIES—ARRIVAL AT AIDOEMA—I VISIT A WOMAN CHIEF—TRITON BAY—I DISCOVER THE ANCIENT REMAINS OF FORMER ENGLISH HABITATIONS—TERRIBLE MAN TRAPS—DEPART FOR ETNA BAY 205

CHAPTER VII.

A NATIVE PILOT—HE DESERTS ME—CONTRARY WINDS AND CURRENTS—TRAVEL THREE HUNDRED MILES FOR NOTHING—ARRIVE IN KYAMAKA BAY—ETNA BAY—ARRIVAL OF NATIVES—POINTED TEETH—TERRIBLE FIGHT WITH NATIVES—THREE OF MY MEN MURDERED—CONTINUOUS FIGHTING—I CAPTURE THE CHIEF—LEAVE ETNA BAY—RETURN TO TOEAL—DUTCH GOVERNMENT—THE DRY SEASON—SCARCITY OF LIVING CREATURES—THE QUEEN OF HOLLAND'S BIRTHDAY—ARRIVAL OF MAIL STEAMER—I DEPART FOR PORT DARWIN 216

CHAPTER VIII.

THE HARBOUR AT PORT DARWIN—THE CABLE COMPANY'S HEAD-QUARTERS—THE TERMINUS OF THE TRANS-CONTINENTAL RAILWAY—CHINATOWN—I TAKE UP MY QUARTERS AT THE RESIDENCY—A CORROBOREE—AN ABORIGINAL'S CAMP—PORT DARWIN AS AN IMPORTANT SEAPORT—ARRIVAL AT THURSDAY ISLAND—THE PEARL FISHERY—NUMBERS OF JAPANESE—THE ARRIVAL OF THE YACHT—I DEPART FOR NEW GUINEA—YULE ISLAND—OPPOSITION MISSIONS—PORT MORESBY—I WATCH A WOMAN BEING TATOOED—THE "MERRIE ENGLAND"—VOYAGE TO SAMARAI—MISSION STATION AT KWATO—THE ONLY STONE CHURCH IN NEW GUINEA—THE NATIVES—I LOSE MY FAVOURITE DOG—DEPARTURE FOR NEW BRITAIN 240

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

PAGE

THE CHINA STRAITS — THE TROBRIAND ISLANDS — BEAUTIFUL NATIVE CARVINGS — EBONY — A NATIVE PEARL FISHERY — THE NATIVES OFFER ME TOMAHAWKS FOR SALE — THE DISCOVERY OF NEW IRELAND — ST. GEORGE'S CHANNEL — I ARRIVE IN BLANCHE BAY — I GIVE A CONJURING ENTERTAINMENT — THE DEVIL-DEVIL — DUKE OF YORK ISLANDS — MIOKO — THE GRAVES OF MURDERED EUROPEANS — NATIVE FESTIVITIES — THE DUK-DUK — I AM POISONED BY A FISH — A NARROW ESCAPE FROM DEATH — I AM LAID UP WITH FEVER — METHOD OF RECRUITING LABOUR — WOMEN MANUFACTURING NAVIVE MONEY — LOCAL BUTTERFLIES — ABUNDANCE OF FISH — THE MIOKO TREE AS A LANDMARK . 258

CHAPTER X.

A BAD GALE — I AM OBLIGED TO RETURN TO MIOKO — A FRESH START — NEW IRELAND NATIVES — STEFFAN STRAITS — NATIVES BRING CANOE LOADS OF PINEAPPLES — I MEET A FRENCH TRADER IN AN OPEN BOAT — I AM PRESENT AT A NATIVE DANCE WHICH TOOK TEN YEARS TO PREPARE — WE ARRIVE AT KUNG — A THIEF — THE DESTRUCTION OF A VILLAGE — STRANGE NATIVE HEAD-DRESS — THE NATIVES COLLECT BEETLES — CURIOUS NATIVE IDEAS — PALMISTRY — ONE OF MY SAILORS RUNS AWAY — PROBABLY EATEN BY NATIVES — MEN AND WOMEN QUITE NAKED — I START FOR THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS 279

CHAPTER XI.

THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS — EXCITEMENT OF THE NATIVES — ST. GABRIEL ISLAND — I RECEIVE A VISIT FROM THE CHIEF — PECULIAR STYLE OF DRESSING THE HAIR — NATIVE COSTUME — A VISIT FROM A WOMAN — THE NATIVES ARE TOO DANGEROUS TO PERMIT OF OUR LANDING — THE MURDERERS OF A WHITE MAN — THE CHIEF STEALS MY HAMMER — I DISCOVER AN UNCHARTED PATCH OF ROCK — I DEPART FOR ADMIRALTY ISLANDS 301

CHAPTER XII.

SMART NATIVES — FRIENDLY SALUTATIONS — EXTRAORDINARY MEMORY — ARRANT THIEVES — NO WOMEN — THE NATIVES CONTEMPLATE KILLING ME — SPEAR WOUNDS ON NATIVES — COWARDICE — MY OWN MEN ARE VERY FRIGHTENED — VERY RICH ISLANDS — NATIVE VOCABULARY 314

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

PAGE

I LEAVE THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS — WE ARE WRECKED ON A REEF OFF NEW IRELAND—RETURN TO NEW BRITAIN—CHINESE CARPENTERS REPAIR THE YACHT—THE HOT SPRINGS IN BLANCHE BAY—THE BOILING RIVER — THE BEEHIVES — EXPERT FEMALE DIVERS—I LEAVE FOR THE SOLOMON ISLANDS — CALL AT SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLANDS — I DISCOVER THE MURDER OF AN ENGLISHMAN — I PHOTOGRAPH THE ASSASSINS — STORY OF A WHITE MAN SWEPT AWAY IN A BOAT AND KILLED AND EATEN BY NATIVES—AN ACTIVE VOLCANO—BOUGANVILLE—DANGEROUS NATIVES — THE CANNIBAL WHO WANTS A SOVEREIGN — H.M.S. "RAPID" PUTS ME IN QUARANTINE—IVORY NUTS—I START FOR AUSTRALIA—ANOTHER ACCIDENT—RETURN TO THE SOLOMONS —H.M.S. "WALLAROO"—THE YACHT CONDEMNED—I LEAVE FOR AUSTRALIA IN THE MAN-OF-WAR 320

CHAPTER XIV.

STRANGE NATIVE CUSTOMS — METHOD OF COOKING FOOD — SALT WATER SOLD FOR THE INTERIOR — NATIVE FISH-HOOKS — DISEASE — NATIVES WITH MANY WIVES — YOUNG GIRLS WITH LARGE FAMILIES — TREACHEROUS PEOPLE — RELIGION — TOTAL EXTINCTION OF THE RACE—FINIS 352

APPENDICES 359

INDEX 383

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
ISTANA	2
ISTANA ZAHRAH	3
TOWN OF JOHORE BARHA	5
THE ROYAL BATH	9
BAMBOO ARCH, JOHORE	11
A GROUP AT THE ROYAL MARRIAGE	13
A PEEP IN THE PALACE GROUNDS	17
FREDERICHWILHELMSHAFEN	21
COASTAL VILLAGE, NEW GUINEA	24
A TOBACCO PLANTATION, NEW GUINEA	25
NEW GUINEA NATIVES	28
NEW GUINEA WOMEN	29
LANDING SOUTH-EAST NEW GUINEA	31
VILLAGE, NEW GUINEA	37
AN UNFRIENDLY VILLAGE	38
A GROUP OF NATIVES	44
SOURCE OF THE RIVER MINJEM	47
DUMBU VILLAGE	51
OURSELVES AT DUMBU	55
MAN AND WOMAN	58
THE VISITORS' HOUSE, NEW GUINEA VILLAGE	60
A WEALTHY CHIEF FROM THE INTERIOR WITH UPPER LIP SLIT AND EACH HALF SEWN UP INTO HIS NOSTRILS AS ORNAMENTATION	63
RALUM, NEW BRITAIN	65
TYPE OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVE	67
TYPE OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVE	68
THE VOLCANO, BLANCHE BAY	69
BLANCHE BAY, NEW BRITAIN	71
NATIVE CHIEF, NEW BRITAIN	73
THE CRATER	76

Digitized by Google

PAGE

NATIVE MARKET, RALUM 77
NATIVE MODE OF CARRYING 79
A NEW BRITAIN CHIEF 83
RICH CHIEF IN THE INTERIOR WITH HIS WIVES AND CHILDREN . 85
A NATIVE DANCE, NEW BRITAIN 89
GATHERING OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVES 91
BISHOP COUPÉ AND HIS CHILDREN—THE BOYS 96
BISHOP COUPÉ'S CHILDREN—THE GIRLS 99
SISTERS OF THE MISSION 103
NATIVE DANCE ON MRS. PARKINSON'S BIRTHDAY 105
INGOVA 109
VIEW IN THE RUBIANA LAGOON 111
PANGA PANGA VILLAGE IN RUBIANA LAGOON 115
NATIVE GIRLS OF LILLIO 117
SOLOMON ISLAND WAR CANOE 121
RUBIANA NATIVE SHOWING DISTENDED EARS 123
A TREE HOUSE, YSABEL ISLAND 126
RUBIANA LAGOON NATIVE WITH DISTENDED EARS . . . 127
VIEW FROM THE HEIGHTS OF PO-PO, YSABEL ISLAND . . . 129
PO-PO VILLAGE, YSABEL ISLAND 131
MYSELF WITH MY NATIVE HUNTERS 137
THE CONCORDIA MILITARY CLUB, BATAVIA 146
KING'S PLAIN, BATAVIA 147
GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S PALACE, BUITENZORG 149
THE VOLCANO, BUITENZORG 151
A BANTING WILD COW AND CALF OF JAVA CROSSING A RIVER IN THE JUNGLE 154
AMBOYNA 168
MAIN STREET OF AMBOYNA 171
THE ORNITHOPTERA BREEDING 179
A NATIVE FORGE, KEI ISLANDS 183
ETNA BAY, THE SCENE OF OUR FIGHT 222
THE SCENE OF THE MURDERS OF JOHNSTON AND SAM . . 226
THE HOME OF MY WOULD-BE MURDERERS 229
A MALAY DANCE 235
A DANCE IN WHICH NONE BUT THOSE OF THE HIGHER CASTE ARE PERMITTED TO TAKE PART 237
THE NATIVES BRING ME VEGETABLES, ETC., TO BUY . . . 245
PORT MORESBY 246
A NATIVE GIRL 247
A VILLAGE BELLE 248
THREE SISTERS 249
A GROUP OF NATIVES 251

Digitized by Google

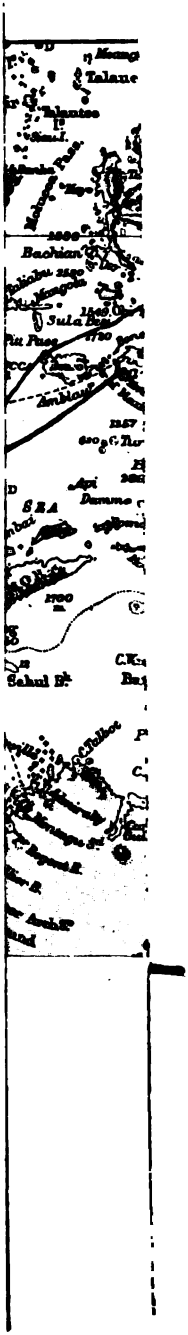
PAGE

KWATO MISSION HOUSE 253
NATIVES 254
A TYPICAL NEW GUINEA RESIDENCE 256
TYPE OF NATIVE 260
A NATIVE GIRL 261
A CONJURING ENTERTAINMENT 263
THE GRAVEYARD AT MIOKO 265
A GROUP OF THE DUK DUK 268
THE DUK DUK 269
NATIVE DANCE 271
A NATIVE MARKET 275
A NEW IRELAND GIRL 280
NATIVE GIRL 281
A TRIBAL FIGHT, NEW HANOVER 285
A VILLAGE ON THE ISLAND OF KUNG, NEW HANOVER . . . 287
NEW HANOVER NATIVES ON BOARD 291
TWO NEW HANOVER MEN WITH THEIR WIVES 295
A FEMALE DANCE 299
KANAU, A CHIEF OF ST. GABRIEL 303
ADMIRALTY ISLANDERS 307
A TYPICAL VILLAGE IN THE INTERIOR OF NEW BRITAIN . . 323
A NEW BRITAIN GIANT 6 FEET 3 INCHES IN HEIGHT . . . 325
THE HOT SPRING, BLANCHE BAY 329
THE TWO CHIEFS AT NORDUP 331
NISSAM, A TRADING STATION 335
NATIVES OF NISSAM WHERE OLIVER BEAVIS WAS MURDERED . 337
GROUP OF WOMEN, SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLAND 341
MEN AND WOMEN, SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLAND 343
A NATIVE OF BUKA, SOLOMON ISLAND 346
ATTACKED 355

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THROUGH NEW GUINEA.

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

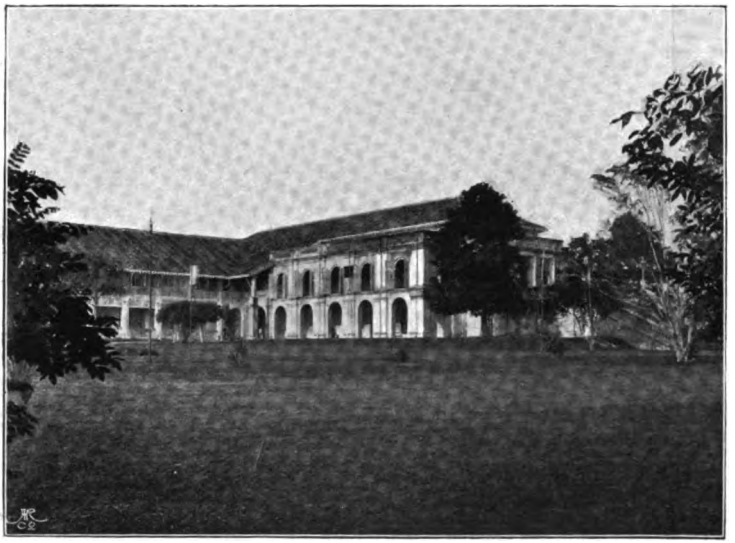
THE FIRST EXPEDITION—THE START—ARRIVAL AT SINGAPORE—THE PALACE OF H.H. SULTAN OF JOHORE—THE TOWN OF JOHORE.

On August 4, 1893, I left London on the P. & O. steamer *Ballarat*, accompanied by Captain Cotton, a friend who was with me throughout my first expedition, to New Guinea, transhipping at Colombo into the *Rohilla*, another P. & O. steamer, which took us as far as Singapore. There we found we should be obliged to wait seven weeks before proceeding to our destination, as the mail service between New Guinea and Singapore was only bi-monthly. We therefore made up our minds to avail ourselves of the hospitality held out by his Highness the Sultan of Johore, whom I had previously met and paid a visit to in the Isle of Wight. So after a few days spent in Singapore we went on to the Istana, the Sultan's beautiful residence in Johore. On our arrival we were most kindly received by the Crown Prince and the Prime Minister, the Dato Metri.

Digitized by Google

The state of Johore, which is situated at the extreme south end of the Malay Peninsula, is independent, and is governed by the Sultan, a faithful ally to Great Britain, and who, until his death, which has occurred since my visit there, was a well-known figure in English and continental society.

The majority of his officials who administrate his little



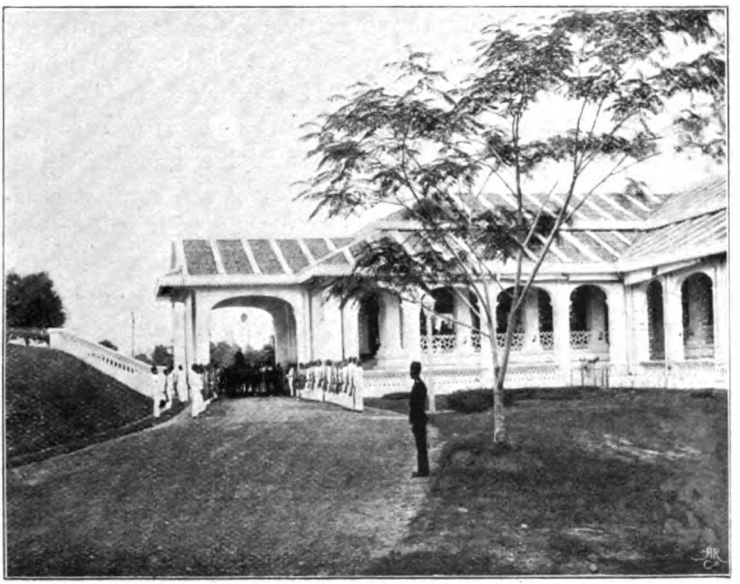
ISTANA.

kingdom are British, and although he is under a treaty to accept a representative of our Government at his court, it is most unlikely that such an occurrence will ever take place so long as affairs are carried out as they are to-day.

The palace, or Istana as it is called, is built in the usual style of eastern palaces, containing a great number of reception rooms, the finest perhaps being the dining, drawing, and ball rooms, each about eighty feet in length.

Digitized by Google

One entire wing of the palace is set apart for bachelors, the whole being most luxuriously furnished throughout, although perhaps to our European tastes a little too gorgeously. The grounds are very extensive and exquisitely laid out, and dotted about here and there amongst rare palms of the east, may be seen picturesque



ISTANA ZAHRAH.

and beautifully built edifices, the residences of court officials. About a hundred and fifty yards distant from the palace is another edifice lately erected for the Tunku Makota, Crown Prince and his bride, for the son of the Sultan was about to be married.

A charming little bungalow on the left, and higher up a slope, catches the eye for its picturesqueness, and one does not need to be told that it is the

Digitized by Google

abode of an Englishman. Here resides the Marine Superintendent, Mr. Ker. Farther down the avenue through the trees can be seen the Istana Zahrah; like the palace itself it is guarded by the Sultan's sentries. As a building it is even larger than the Istana proper, and is inhabited by the feminine portion of the royal family. Yet another building still further on, called the Bali Besar, was especially built for the solemnisation of the marriage ceremony of the Crown Prince. It is built in the shape of a cross, is floored with white marble, and has massive stone pillars from end to end within; and in the centre of the building is erected a raised daïs on which the bridegroom has to undergo the nuptial ceremony. The whole interior was draped with yellow silk hangings, and when at night the structure was lighted by means of candles set in magnificent cut-glass chandeliers, it imparted a very gorgeous and dazzling effect.

The royal stables contained some thirty horses, and all sorts and conditions of carriages, from the gilded state conveyance, with its orange satin upholstery, to the lowly 'rickshaw—the whole presided over by an Englishman.

The town of Johore lies at the foot of the palace grounds, containing about nine thousand inhabitants, of whom the ubiquitous Chinese predominate. The principal landing place is named the Edinburgh Pier, and was built in commemoration of the visit of his Royal Highness the Duke of Edinburgh to Johore some years ago. The town contains a gaol, hospital, club, and many other minor buildings of less importance. Overlooking the town can be seen the Fort, the quarters of the Johore forces.

Digitized by Google

TOWN OF JOHORE BARHA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

WEDDING OF THE CROWN PRINCE, THE PRESENT REIGNING SULTAN.

I WAS fortunate enough to be here at the time when the Crown Prince who, since his father's death, has been crowned Sultan, was married to his cousin. The ceremony, which of course, being Eastern, was of a most gorgeous nature, took about three weeks to accomplish. The preliminary ceremony, performed on the 21st of September, was principally noteworthy for the absence of the bride. Various passages from the Koran were read over by the high priest to the bridegroom, who stood upon the daïs in the Bali Besar, surrounded by an enormous retinue and numerous guests.

A few minutes sufficed for this portion of the proceedings, and after prostrating himself and a great deal of handshaking he returned to the Istana, where he remained in his own apartments guarded by sixteen women, and from then, until the following Thursday, according to the Mahometan rite, he was not allowed outside. On that day a second and far more imposing ceremony took place, the Crown Prince appearing in most gorgeous apparel of cloth of gold—with the palms of his hands, his nails, and his feet, which were bare, dyed a brilliant red, according to the Malay custom. A procession was formed in the following order :—

1. The Royal Ensign.

Digitized by Google

2. The military brass band of the Johore forces.

3. The Cabulis Guard.

4. The Guides, consisting of four Princes in a state coach.

5. A state coach containing two Royal Kris Panjang Bearers. The Bearer of the State Sword, and the Bearer of the Royal Betel Box.

6. The bridegroom in a gilded state carriage drawn by a beautiful team of horses, and accompanied by two princes as groomsmen.

7. Twelve of the Royal Bodyguard who marched at equal distances apart on either side of the state carriage.

8. Four royal carriages containing the sixteen women who had been in attendance during the past week, each carrying the royal candlestick.

9. The Royal Malay Military Guard.

10. Commandant of the Johore Forces.

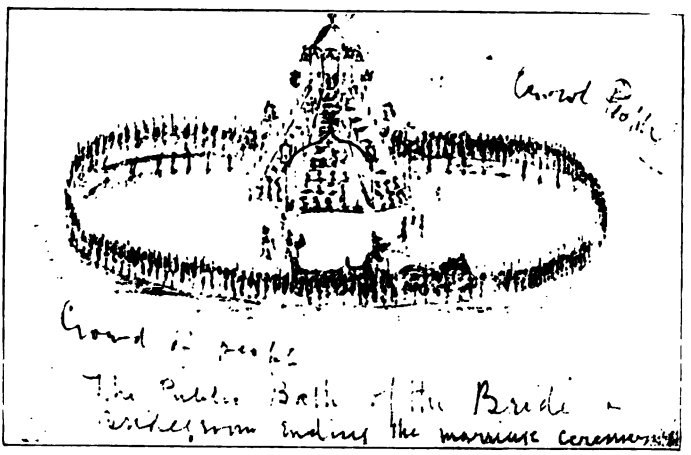
11. Royal carriages and guests.

The whole *cortège* proceeded at a foot's pace through the principal streets of the town, and eventually reached the Istana Zahrah, where the bridegroom held a reception.

On the following Tuesday evening the bride made her first appearance to the public, accompanied by the bridegroom; for on this occasion they were to partake of the public bath, a custom never omitted, and the most essential part of a Malay Royal wedding. This bath resembles somewhat a monument, the summit of which is reached by short, steep steps, upon which the Royal retinue of women were seated. At the top, and surmounted by a gilded dome, a fountain is in such a way manipulated as to throw water over the whole structure from top to bottom, consequently, when the Prince and his bride arrived beneath the dome, water which had been laid on from a reservoir, some two miles distant, was suddenly started and the whole assembly drenched to the skin.

Digitized by Google

The beauty of this function, which took place at night, was greatly enhanced by the fact that the whole scene was lit up by thousands of fairy lights and Japanese lanterns in all colours. After a gorgeous display of fireworks and the Sultan's national anthem performed by the bands in attendance, the Royal couple descended, and the nuptials were complete, and the Crown Prince and his bride were considered man and wife.



THE ROYAL BATH.

On the following week another royal wedding took place, the bridegroom on this occasion being "Unku Salaman," a nephew of the Sultan. Although not so much gorgeous display was exhibited, this ceremony was exceedingly interesting. The bridegroom was an hour and three quarters late, and consequently we were all kept waiting. On his arrival he told us his bride's brother, whose consent as her guardian was indispensable, was missing, and he was eventually discovered in the middle

Digitized by Google

of a game of billiards in a house some half a mile away. I afterwards learned from another member of the Royal family, that the real reason of the bridegroom's absence was accounted for from the fact that he had fallen asleep on the verandah of his own house.

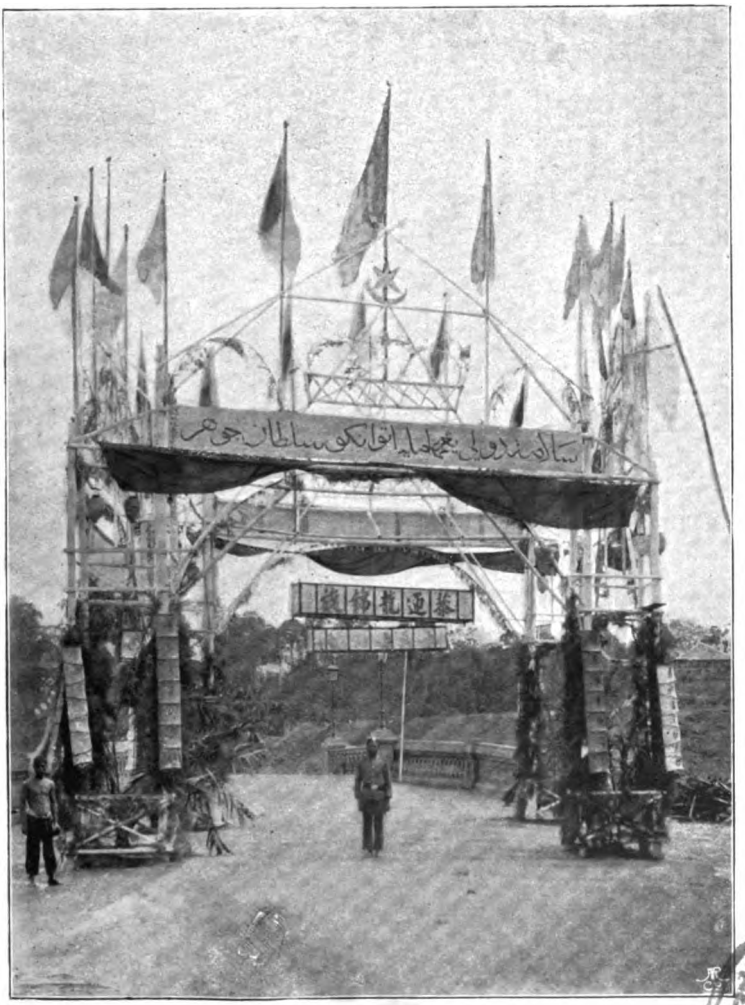
The long delay was in a way a greater punishment to me, inasmuch as I was obliged to sit in Eastern fashion until my legs became very numbed and painful.

When he did, however, arrive, he was accompanied by the judge of his district, sword-bearers, and eight female attendants, who chanted Malay melodies throughout the whole proceedings.

This wedding materially differed from the more imposing ceremony of the Crown Prince, inasmuch as it was completed in three days.

After the High Priest had pronounced his Benediction, the bridegroom was led behind a screen at the end of the room, and there, before twenty girls, whom I perceived squatting on the floor, changed his dress, to one literally ablaze with gold and diamonds, from the wonderful ornament on his head to the bejewelled slippers on his feet. After having received our individual congratulations, he repaired to the Istana Zahrah, where we followed him and found all the doors barred and zealously guarded by the ladies of the harem, as according to Malay custom a tax is levied before the bridegroom can gain admission to his bride. We were all, therefore, invited to help pay the tax, and many were the dollars, gold pieces, and notes thrown over the door to the eager sirens within. By this means door after door was opened to us; one door only remained, but alas! the funds of the whole company had become entirely exhausted, the only remaining coin that could be found being a bad dollar, which had been palmed off on me by a wily Chinaman the day before; however, it answered well enough, and the remaining door

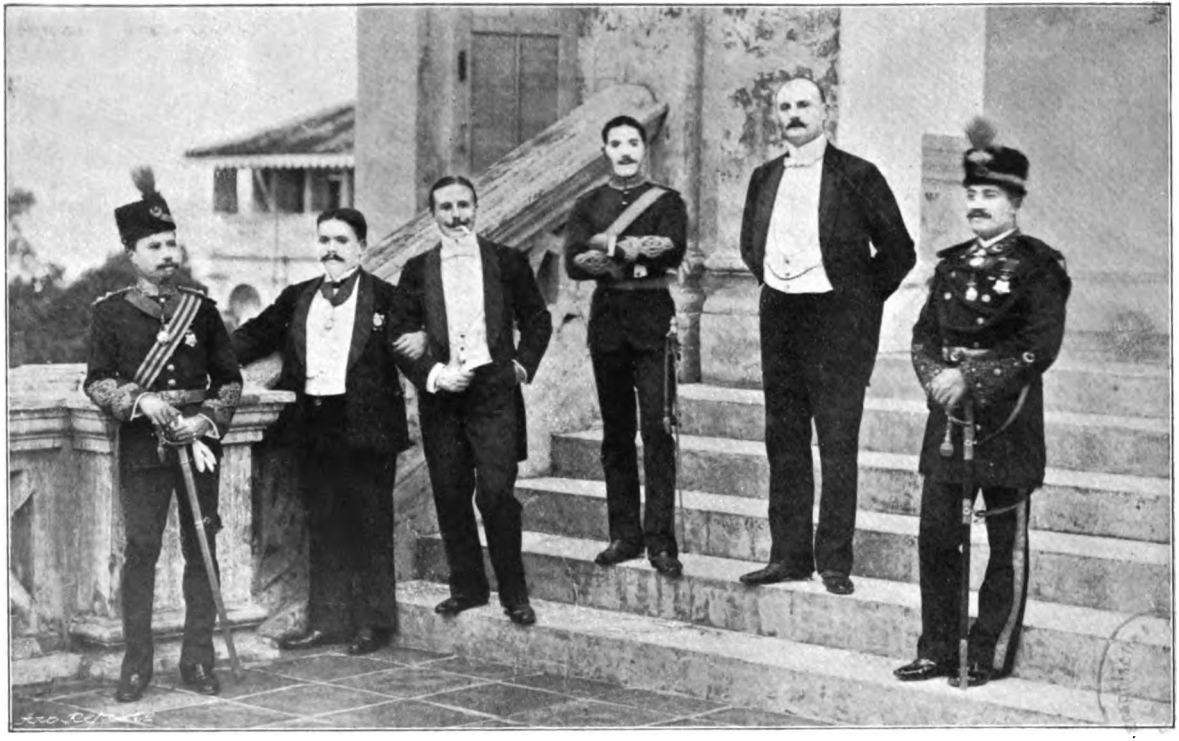
Digitized by Google



BAMBOO ARCH, JOHORE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A GROUP AT THE ROYAL MARRIAGE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

was passed, but we found that a more exciting part of the performance was yet to come.

At the top of the stairs stood the bride, but between her and the attacking male party were at least a hundred ladies. Through these we had to force our way, and eventually, very hot and exhausted, we reached the bride and handed her over to the bridegroom, who was placed upon a magnificently gilded couch to again receive the congratulations of his guests. After being presented with a marriage favour I retired, accompanied by the Crown Prince, and adjourned to the Johore Club, where the rest of the evening was passed.

One evening, when dining alone with the admiral of the Sultan's fleet, otherwise the Marine Superintendent, in the palace, I was surprised to hear the butler opening so many bottles of champagne. After three corks had flown I said—

"Surely the man's off his head; what on earth is he opening so many for?"

On being interrogated, he said he was only doing it for my sake as the Tuan Ingris (English gentleman) was very fond of champagne. I asked him in Malay what he meant by such a statement. "Well," said he, "all I know is that your native servant comes down at least ten times a day for a bottle of champagne for his master."

I need hardly say I had never sent for nor received any at all. This had been going on for days, and my scoundrel of a boy must have made a good thing selling what he could not drink. I had at least the consolation of knowing that he had a little real pain as well, and his head must have been sore for a week.

The remainder of our visit in Johore was occupied in elephant and tiger shooting, which the Crown Prince inaugurated for our benefit. A few days before leaving, however, at the invitation of the Sultan, I drove over to

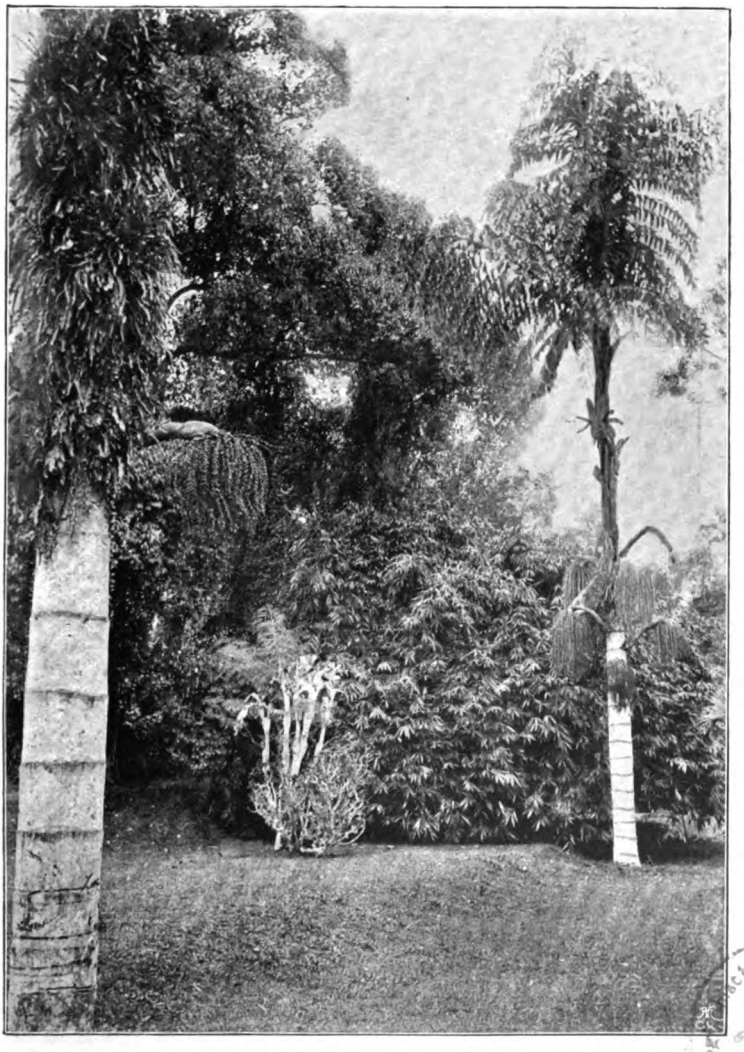
Digitized by Google

Tyersall, his Singapore palace, over which he very kindly personally conducted me. This palace, situated on a hill two miles from the town of Singapore, may justly lay claim to the title of an Oriental palace of great artistic design. It is of most substantial structure, with a verandah of not less than a quarter of a mile in circumference. Its marble floors, stately halls, magnificent reception and ball rooms and spacious suites of sleeping apartments, furnished and decorated throughout in a most princely and luxurious manner, make it an edifice of singular beauty and elegance.

The drawing-room furniture struck me as being exceptionally unique—it was of cut-glass upholstered in yellow satin.

The palace contains a collection of curious pictures, bronzes, and other articles of vertu, which constitute this palace without doubt by far the most beautiful European edifice in the East, as its owner is distinctly the most hospitable of all Eastern potentates. I cannot close this chapter, however, without expressing my sincerest gratitude for the very kind treatment I received at the hands of the late Sultan and his son, who now reigns, and of all his officials, and I shall always look back upon my visit there as two very pleasant months.

Digitized by Google



A PEEP IN THE PALACE GROUNDS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

ON BOARD THE NORTH GERMAN LLOYD STEAMER "LUBECK"—JAVANESE LABOUR COOLIES—GAMBLING ON BOARD — ARRIVAL IN NEW GUINEA — HEADQUARTERS OF THE ASTROLABE BAY COMPANY—SIMBANG MISSION STATION—A NATIVE VILLAGE—NATIVES—A JOURNEY UP THE SADDLEBERG.

THE ss. *Lubeck*, which runs between German New Guinea and Singapore, was crowded with Chinese coolies, some two hundred in number, who had been engaged by the New Guinea Company to work on their tobacco plantations. Our nine fellow-passengers were on their way to New Guinea to take up different government appointments there.

After two days we arrived at Batavia, the chief port of Java, where we took on board about a hundred and fifty Javanese coolies of both sexes, bound for the same destination. The Dutch Government agent, who shipped these unfortunate creatures, was, without exception, the most tyrannical bully it has ever been my misfortune to come across, hitting and kicking the poor people for no apparent reason, until I remonstrated and censured him for his conduct.

Immediately the vessel left the port the Chinese contractor who had come over from New Guinea exclusively to engage these labourers, proceeded to open

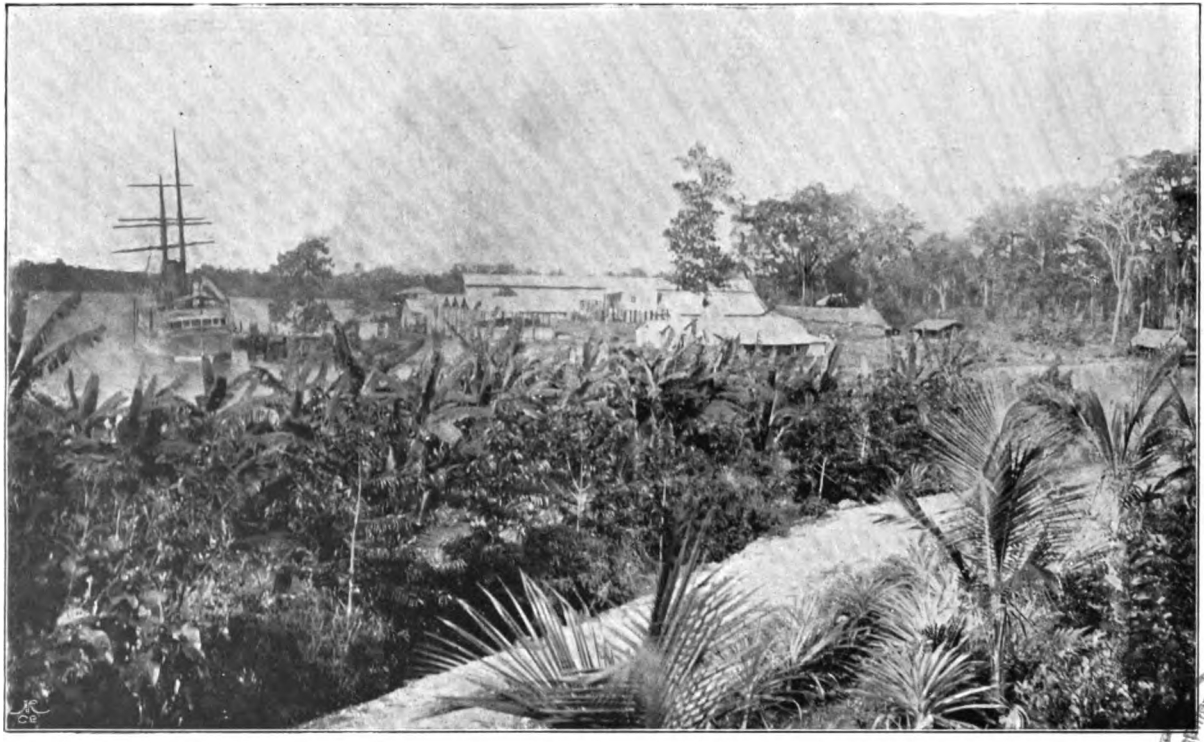
Digitized by Google

a gambling saloon between decks on his own account, acting himself as banker. By this means the thirty dollars which each coolie had received as an advance of wages, was speedily transferred to his pockets. This appeared to be a customary proceeding, but I hope long before this the authorities have become cognisant of the fact, and have suppressed the practice. I was told on most reliable authority that the coolies on certain plantations in Netherlands India, on receiving their annual wages, invariably gamble with the planter himself, who on these occasions always acts as banker, the game of pau or fan-ta being usually played, the result in these instances being the same that came to pass on board the *Lubeck*. The Chinaman is most undoubtedly an inveterate gambler; that and the habit of opium smoking are his two indispensable luxuries. I have been told by an old planter that a modicum of opium is most beneficial to him, and after a moderate use of it they can be induced to work infinitely better.

On the 9th of November we arrived at Frederichwilhelmshafen, the chief port and the headquarters of the New Guinea Company. I believe since my visit this place has been abandoned for a harbour some twenty miles down the coast. His Excellency the Governor, or Landeshauptman, as he is styled, came on board, and invited us at once to take up our abode at the Residency, and I may say that, during the whole of our visit in German New Guinea, he did everything in his power to make us comfortable and to carry out the instructions he had received from Berlin as to assisting us in the contemplated collections and explorations to the interior.

After a temporary visit of a few days we went to Stephansort, the headquarters of the Astrolabe Bay Company, situated some twenty-two miles south of Frederichwilhelmshafen. On arrival there we were much pressed

Digitized by Google



FREDERICHWILHELMS HAFEN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

by the Head Administrator to make his home our head-quarters whilst in the country, and as it seemed that from here we should be better able to carry out our designs we gladly accepted the invitation. This appeared to be an admirable field for the collection of birds and lepidoptera, and we now commenced in real earnest to collect birds, mammals and butterflies. One of my earliest captures was a magnificent specimen of the Onithoptera Paradisea, of which only one specimen had before reached Europe, and I felt that it was worth the whole of my journey to New Guinea to see this truly superb insect lying glistening in my hand.

A morning or two after we arrived, I was unfortunately a witness to the public flogging of a Chinaman who had incited six of his countrymen to run away, leading them to believe that China itself would be found on the other side of the great Finisterre mountains looming up about ten miles in the interior. They were captured after a very few hours and brought back, but it appeared to me that the offence hardly merited the terrible punishment inflicted by the authorities.

As the weather was so unpropitious, and we were told that it would not improve for about a month, we took advantage of the government steamer *Ysabel* going to Simbang to migrate there, in the hope of an improvement in the weather further south, and we were not disappointed, for during the whole of our visit to that part of the country there were only two or three showers, and we were able to add some thousands of specimens to our collection, in fact I look back upon our Simbang additions as being the finest and rarest of anything captured during the whole of my first expedition to New Guinea. The mission station at which we stayed is situated on a hill directly above the beach and at the mouth of a river; it was a long, one-storied house, built on piles, very airy and most comfortable.

Digitized by Google

The missionaries, three in number, heartily welcomed us, and during the month we stayed in their house did everything they could to make our visit a pleasant one. On the opposite bank of the river could be seen an old coffee plantation, at one time worked by the New Guinea Company, but now abandoned, the missionaries gathering what little coffee remains for their own use.

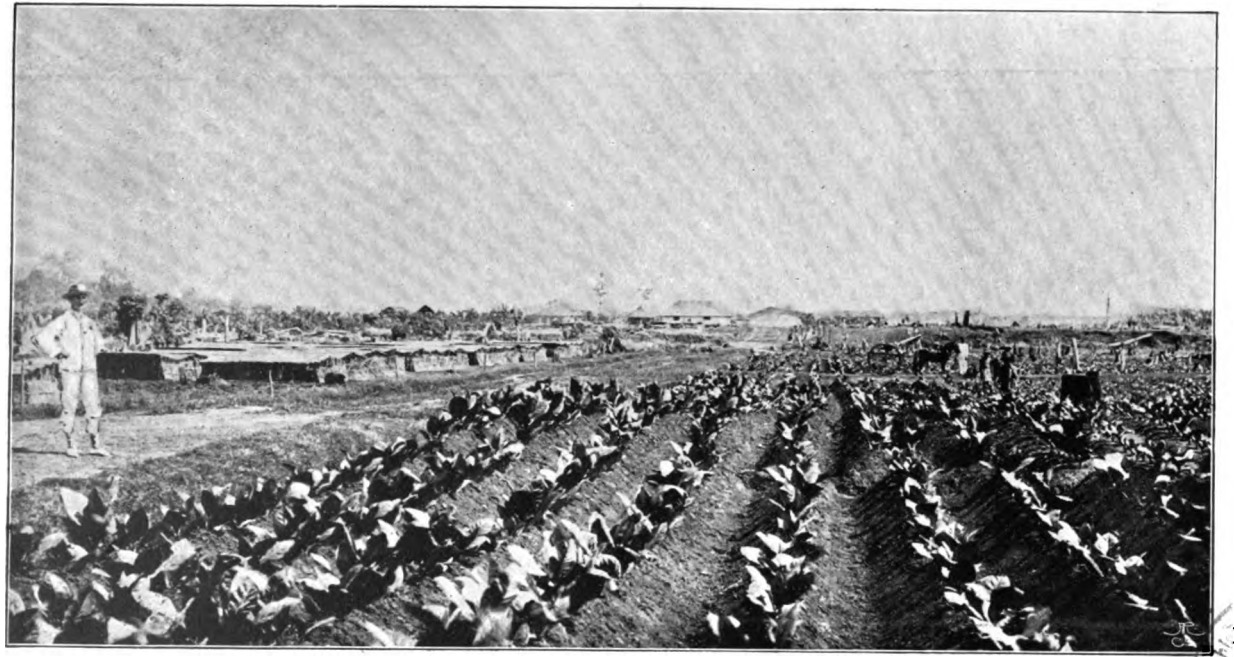
About three-quarters of a mile up the river one comes upon a most lovely waterfall, overhung by exquisite tropical

COSTAL VILLAGE, NEW GUINEA.

foliage which is so dense that the sun hardly ever penetrates through it. Boutowing, as it is called, is truly one of the most beautiful spots in that great virgin forest of New Guinea. I repaired here daily, where some of our most valuable gleanings of onithoptera, spapilios, &c., were taken. The natives were all most willing to help, and came every morning for butterfly-nets and fresh supplies of papers, which they invariably filled by night time.

The village, which is built at the mouth of the river below the mission station, is considered for New Guinea a very large one, the houses being one and all built upon piles,

Digitized by Google



A TOBACCO PLANTATION, NEW GUINEA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

with small openings at one end sufficiently large to allow a human being to crawl in and out. They were all more or less carved, and in some instances this form of decoration was exceedingly well done. The natives are true Papuans, and I noticed here, as indeed I have seen throughout the whole of the country, both in the British, German, and Dutch possessions, a strong Hebrew type running through their features. The men were finely built, and in some instances exceptionally so, their only clothing being a small piece of stringy fibre wound round the loins and passed up through the legs. The hair in most cases is wound up and tied with a similar substance; a small network basket is invariably slung on the right shoulder, in which is carried the lime-pot, betel-nut, and such usual impedimenta of the South Sea islander. The betel-nut, which is as indispensable to the native as tobacco is to the white man, is the fruit of a certain palm and is excessively hot and nasty; after much use of it the teeth and gums become very much discoloured, and long before the eater is adult become perfectly black. The lime which is eaten at the same time adds a little to the fiery taste of the betel-nut, and the whole, when mixed up with a pepper leaf which is also added, makes the mouthful a veritable *paté au diable.*

The women, who are shorter in stature and, if possible, more hideous in appearance than the men, although on some very few occasions I have observed young girls with passable features, are all well nourished, and appeared to me to be invariably either in a condition of carrying infants or about to do so. Their clothing consists of grass, about a foot in length, the ends of which are strung together and tied round the waist. The hair is in most instances caked up with some black, sticky substance, which gives it the appearance of a sheep skin draggled in the mud for a considerable time and then allowed to

Digitized by Google

dry. Notwithstanding the use of betel-nut they all smoke tobacco, which has been introduced into the country by Europeans, and I have on more than one occasion observed a mere infant remove the pipe from his mouth to refresh himself from the natural food produced by his mother. I have also seen a woman nourishing her child and a small pig at the same time, carrying one under

NEW GUINEA NATIVES.

each arm, appearing to be more anxious for the welfare of the latter, in consequence of its greater market value.

The natives have a belief that everything having life can speak, the trees, fish, plants, &c., and they are always expecting them to talk in their particular language. Another curious native belief here, as to the existence of numerous small islands which are dotted about the coast, is that once upon a time there lived a wicked woman who was the wife of a great chief; she was always

Digitized by Google

eating, and at last one day she became very ill, and throwing up her food first in one place and then in another, the different islands sprang up as we see them now.

One boy, about seventeen years of age, who had got himself into trouble by fighting and killing a chief of another tribe, and who was born at this village, took a

NEW GUINEA WOMEN.

great fancy to me. I taught him amongst other things to shoot, and when I left he accompanied me. His name was Togi, and he cost me some few yards of red cloth, a tomahawk, and some handfuls of beads. He turned out to be a most valuable help, afterwards assisting me with my photography and natural history collections generally. He eventually accompanied me to England, where I exhibited him at the University Hall of London on the

Digitized by Google

occasion of my reading a paper before the Royal Geographical Society, but after a few months in this country he succumbed to an attack of pneumonia.

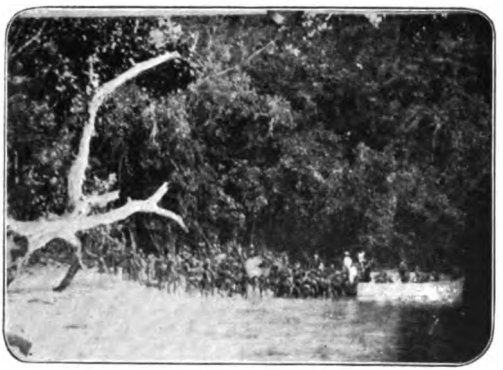
Whilst at Simbang I met a German gentleman named Kernbach, who was recruiting labour for the New Guinea Company, but at the time of my visit was not very successful. He informed me that the year previously he had recruited 138 natives from Berlinhafen, a harbour a few miles north of the Government station, and brought them down to Frederichwilhelmshafen. After remaining one night, however, 130 of them ran away, and tried to get back along the coast to their village, which was only a few miles distant. Not one of these unfortunate creatures accomplished the distance, for they were all killed and eaten by other tribes living along the coast.

During our stay at Simbang we paid a visit to the Saddleberg, a mountain some twelve miles away in the interior, in a north-westerly direction. The first part of the journey, which was undertaken in a boat, occupied about three hours. We were accompanied by two of the missionaries. Landing at a small bay named Katigot, we commenced the ascent, and when about half way up, we were met by the missionary who lived at the summit of the mountain, whose house is the farthest inland and at much the highest elevation of any white man's residence in the whole of New Guinea; it is at an altitude of 3,000 feet. After many hours of hard climbing we gained the top, and received a hearty welcome from Mrs. Fleyel, the wife of our host. I observed during the ascent many native villages and plantations. At an altitude of 1,500 feet I discovered ripe raspberries, which, although small, were almost identical in taste and appearance with the European species. At 2,000 feet I came across acorns and many European shrubs. The climate at the summit was most delightful, my thermometer registering

Digitized by Google

at 6 P.M. only 60° Fahrenheit. The house was built by the missionary himself, and consisted of sticks tied together with fibre, and although it was a very rough-and-tumble edifice I slept as comfortably that night as on a down bed of state. The whole building is surrounded by a high bamboo fence, constructed to prevent any sudden surprise from the natives and also to guard against theft.

From this house we obtained a most beautiful view of the surrounding country; the sea, which was ten miles



LANDING SOUTH-EAST NEW GUINEA.

distant, appeared at our feet, and the great island of New Britain was also plainly discernible. Immediately beneath us lay Finchhafen, the original headquarters of the New Guinea Company. This harbour was after two years abandoned in consequence of its unhealthiness, very many of the German officials having died there. Not a soul is now to be seen, and even the graveyard, in which lie the bodies of many Europeans, their wives and children, is an uncared-for wilderness, and no sound is heard save the wauk-wauk of the paradise bird in the day-time and the dismal boom of the native drum at

Digitized by Google

night, so often the herald of a midnight cannibal feast and orgie. I collected here a great many specimens of the beautiful Paradisea Guilielmi, in my opinion one of the most exquisite of all the Paradisea; also a great number of rare and new papilios. After spending a few days here we returned to Simbang in time to catch the *Ysabel*, which took us back to Stephansort.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

DEATH OF AN OFFICIAL — NATIVES CARRY HIS EXCELLENCY'S PIANO—THE START FOR THE INTERIOR.

THE day of our return was marked by the sad death of Mr. Richter, one of the officials of the Astrolabe Bay Company. This gentleman, who had only arrived from Europe by the previous steamer, was attacked by fever after breakfast and was buried at four o'clock on the same day. Attending his funeral, I had the misfortune to catch a chill, which brought on a severe attack of rheumatic fever. The doctor was most attentive, and remained with me for several days and nights, although in a most delicate state of health himself.

This illness necessitated a still further delay, the more annoying as the weather had become apparently more settled, and I had received a letter from his Excellency the Governor informing me that the bearers and military police with whom he had promised to furnish us for the expedition to the interior were at our disposal. At the same time he requested me to come to Frederichwilhelmshafen to make final arrangements, and promised to send on the following week his steam launch to fetch me for that purpose. It required, nevertheless, a fortnight before I was strong enough to make the journey.

Arrived at Frederichwilhelmshafen I saw all our men medically examined, and handed them over to Sergeant

Digitized by Google

Pearing, a German official whom I engaged to accompany us, and, taking the proper quantities of rice, beef, and other provisions, and signing an agreement with the Governor, I brought them all, forty in number, back with me to Stephensort, where Captain Cotton had remained, and from which place we intended starting for the interior.

When at Frederichwilhelmshafen a piano arrived for his Excellency, and some natives were told off to carry the strange-looking case from the beach to the house. After going a few yards one stumbled, thereby causing the corner of the crate to strike the ground, and, ever on the alert for strange sounds and noises, their ears were immediately pressed against it, listening until the ting of the wires had died away. Again, after a yard or two, a similar mishap occurred, again many ears were listening to the strange sound so foreign to them, until one, a little more knowing than the rest, with a heave raised the whole case some inches from the ground and let it go. The noise which issued from the inside had by this time worked them up to such a frenzy that they one and all seized upon it and rolled it over and over, dancing with joy at the strange sounds which came forth, and it was not until this performance had been repeated many times that the eye of an official was attracted by the shouts and yells of the natives, not before, however, much damage had been done and many strings broken.

The natives who speak pidjin English call this instrument a "box belong cry."

They say, "Whitey man he fight him belong hand, box he cry out too much."

The following is a list of the provisions, &c., I took with me: Tobacco, matches, medicines, beads, looking-glasses, axes, tomahawks, plane irons, red paint, knives, forks, plates, cooking utensils, cocoa, brandy, biscuits,

Digitized by Google

candles, cornflour, flour, salt, meat extract, tea, soap, sugar, tinned meats, natural history collecting apparatus, tent, scientific instruments, five guns, ten rifles, ammunition, blankets, and rice.

Our provisions packed and everything ready, we at last said goodbye to the coast, and it was not without a certain amount of trepidation that I looked back upon the sea-beach and wondered if I should ever see it again.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

WE BID GOODBYE TO HIS EXCELLENCY THE GOVERNOR—ASTONISHED NATIVES—ANGRY NATIVES—WE SHOOT SOME PARADISE BIRDS—ONE OF OUR MEN CATCHES A STRANGE MAMMAL—AM ATTACKED WITH RHEUMATIC FEVER.

We left Bokajim, the village near Stephensort, in the Astrolable Bay, on March 22, 1894, and after receiving many good wishes for a successful journey and safe return from his Excellency and all the officials, who gathered together to witness our departure, and amid the silent wonderings of the many natives who crowded round us we commenced the journey, accompanied by a German missionary named Hoffmann and two natives, their object being to introduce us to a chief of a native village some ten miles inland, and to assure him that our expedition was in no way a hostile one, but solely for the purpose of exploration and to collect specimens of natural history.

Taking a southerly course along the bank of the river Minjem, which was in flood, we were obliged to cross and recross no less than eleven times. So strong was the current that on many occasions our only possible means of navigating it in safety was to lash the whole cavalcade together with fibre, and in this way reach the opposite bank. Nevertheless, in spite of these precautions, we had many narrow escapes, and on more than

Digitized by Google

one occasion articles of value were swept away down the river at a pace which utterly precluded any possibility of recovery.

At about midday the two coastal natives deserted us.

Finding the river winding a little to the westward we kept our course, and struck out for the village of Wiengi, and a camp was made about a mile therefrom at four

VILLAGE, NEW GUINEA.

o'clock in the afternoon, at a distance of seven miles from the coast.

The next morning we moved into the village and decided to remain the day there to rearrange the baggage. Notwithstanding the presence of the missionary who, as I have previously stated, accompanied us thus far to introduce us, the natives seemed ill-disposed to trade with us, and treated us altogether with scant courtesy.

At 6 P.M. the thermometer registered 75° Fahrenheit.

Digitized by Google

The natives in this village, who were very much decorated with feathers from the paradise bird, passed the whole of the night beating their tom-toms, shouting, and dancing, which prevented us from getting a moment's sleep.

Mr. Hoffmann here left us and returned to Stephensort. He had hardly gone before the natives requested us to move on, and I could see by their demeanour that they were not well disposed towards us. However, I had found a papilio, which appeared to me to be different to the one of that species I had collected at Stephensort,

AN UNFRIENDLY VILLAGE.

and so I remained another day, which enabled me to obtain several more specimens of it.

The next morning at 7 A.M. we struck camp, and moving in a south-westerly direction passed through much dense virgin forest, over mountains, and down steep ravines, until at noon the village of Vittib was reached, when after a short halt we proceeded in the same south-westerly direction until at two o'clock we passed the village of Dibbori, a short distance further on, and camped for the night.

It was astonishing, as soon as a halt was called and our

Digitized by Google

men were told that they were to remain there for the night, how quickly and ingeniously they erected their houses, which consisted solely of poles and sago palms lashed together; their resting places inside consisted of poles raised about three feet from the ground laid along a cross piece.

In a few minutes quite a large village seemed to spring up, and the little huts, with their palm-leaf roofs, dotted here and there among the trees, gave the scene quite a picturesque and homely appearance.

Some of our bearers being natives of one country and some of another—for I had not thought it wise to choose all the men of one race—they invariably made different styles of houses. Those natives from Buka, in the Solomon Islands, some twelve in number, always destroyed their domiciles each morning before leaving, in order, as they told me, to prevent any one else from sleeping there after they had left.

This camp was made on a ridge above the valley of the river Minjem, which river I could plainly see, running in a south-westerly direction. During the day one of our bearers was taken ill, and several had sores on their shoulders from carrying such unaccustomed burdens. Before dark two of the boys brought in six birds of paradise, which kept me far into the night skinning. At 6 P.M. the thermometer registered 75°, the aneroid showing 1,540 feet above sea-level.

The next morning, after proceeding a short distance, a mammal, Echidna, was captured, but much to my regret it had been so much injured,and the young one in the pouch killed, that I had with great reluctance to kill and skin it. After marching about two hours we passed through an old and deserted plantation, and shortly afterwards descended into a very deep valley, at the bottom of which was a beautiful stream coming from the south.

Digitized by Google

Climbing a very high mountain on the other side we began to see signs of natives, and a short distance farther on entered a large village called Jillim, which consisted of eighteen houses. The natives at first were very frightened and backed away from us shouting, "Ki-ki Ki-ki?" (What do you want here?). After our having reassured them they proved most hospitable and useful, and brought us delicious water in long bamboos. Upper Jillim, situated close by, stands at an altitude of 2,000 feet above the sea, but the country we passed through was mountainous and unfit for culture. By gestures we explained to the natives that we desired to sleep there, and that we required food for all our men. It was our object to save our own provisions as much as possible, until the time came, perhaps, when we should be unable to procure any from the natives. We showed them red paint and beads, when taros (a native root, resembling a turnip, very extensively cultivated throughout the South Seas) and sugar cane were brought in great abundance.

Our men, who by this time had recovered their health and spirits, evidently enjoyed themselves, and the night was far spent ere they ceased from singing their native legends and settled down to sleep. We were now at an altitude of 1,450 feet above the sea-level. None of the natives at this village had ever been to the coast, nor had they ever seen the face of a white man before, nevertheless, they seemed to have absolute confidence in us and were anxious to accompany us part of the way on our journey. Six of them did come a little way and proved themselves very useful indeed in relieving some of the weakest of our bearers. During the following morning we passed through a native plantation, where the men regaled themselves with sugar cane, and so on to Dumbu, a very small village nearly 3,000 feet above the sea. To get here we descended an extremely steep

Digitized by Google

ravine and had a long climb afterwards. This was the highest point we had yet attained. The country hereabouts had rocky and stony soil. Here again we obtained plenty of taros. Red paint seemed to be the favourite medium of trade, as a few spoonfuls obtained for us as much as we required. We were glad to pitch our tent and get the men into houses, placed at their disposal, as the rain was descending in torrents.

From this date until we arrived back in Stephensort we experienced the most terrible weather.

The natives here grow a species of tobacco round their houses, the leaves of which they pluck, and after drying them in the sun for a few hours, roll them up into a very primitive kind of cigar which is at once smoked. This was the last village we saw, although we heard of others in the neighbourhood. The thermometer here at 6 P.M. registered 68° Fahrenheit. We were obliged to remain another day in this village, as it poured without ceasing for nearly twenty-four hours.

On the 2nd of April we waited until nearly mid-day for the rain to cease and then started in a south-westerly direction, skirting a mountain and the end of a large valley afterwards, but as soon as was practicable changed our course for a westerly one, and very soon came on to the Minjem running north. We were accompanied thus far by a Dumbu native who had promised to guide us to Imbli, a village a mile or two further on and not much out of our true line. But as after a few hundred yards he ran away, we changed the direction to due south, crossing several mountain streams until we again came to the Minjem running north.

The bad weather we were experiencing, for it was incessantly raining, very materially affected our collections, and as our shot cartridges were feeling the effects of the terrible damp, we were obtaining fewer paradise birds every day.

Digitized by Google

We pitched our camp towards sundown above the right bank of the river, our altitude being 380 feet above sea-level and the thermometer at 6 P.M. registering 82°. We were obliged to remain here for two or three days as I had a sharp attack of fever with rheumatism. In the meantime we sent some men back to Dumbu to request the natives to bring us taros and yams, which they did on two occasions. The few days we camped here it rained without ceasing day and night. Consequently the river became very high and quite impassable.

On the 7th, the fever having left me, we pushed on again, but owing to the dense forest were obliged to cut our way, still in a south-westerly direction, crossing many mountain streams, in one of which I discovered a dam, evidently made by the natives to catch fish, but as we could not discover any tracks at all presumed they had travelled down the stream for some distance.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

WE FELL A TREE TO CROSS THE RIVER—ARE MET BY A FEW NATIVES: THEY SPEAK THE BOKAJIM DIALECT—SOURCE OF THE RIVER MINJEM—A LABORIOUS ASCENT—ARE OBLIGED TO CUT OUR WAY—THE SUMMIT—NO BISMARCK MOUNTAINS—CANNOT FIND NATIVES—BAD WATER—WE START ON THE RETURN JOURNEY.

THE country we passed through now was very swampy, and enormous ferns nearly twenty feet high towered on either side of us. On this morning, 8th of April, we again struck the river, but found it too much in flood to cross, and so selecting an enormous tree growing close to the bank felled it as a means of transit. On reaching the opposite side we were greeted by a dozen natives, who, having heard of us, brought five or six inferior taros for sale, not enough for a meal for one man. These men, who were miserably thin and poor, and without ornaments of any description, belonged to Oombali, and were the last natives we saw.

Strangely enough they spoke the Bokajim dialect. This was a matter of great interest, as they did not even know the name "Bokajim," had never seen the sea, and it is extremely improbable that they have ever had, at any rate for a great number of years, any communication one with another. It seemed the more curious as all the other villages between there and the coast spoke different dialects. We gave them a good supply of red paint,

Digitized by Google

beads, and other things to induce them to direct us to the mountain we were making for, the peak of which could be seen looming in the distance. But immediately after receiving them they all ran away.

The river went westerly that day for a while, and we left it several times as we found it better to cut a road through the forest. But we were obliged again in the

A GROUP OF NATIVES.

afternoon to re-cross it, but not without experiencing the greatest difficulty in doing so, the current being exceptionally strong and rapid.

On the 9th we made an early start, following the river. We halted at midday for an hour or two to enable our men to cook themselves a meal, for the rain had been so heavy on the previous evening, lasting up to ten o'clock in the morning, they had been quite unable to light any fires

Digitized by Google

at all. About two o'clock we started again, and soon came to where the river parted—one branch running to the south-east for a short distance, when it began to fall in cascades from a mountain, the other running to the south-west, where, after about a mile, it fell in waterfalls from the same mountain. This was evidently the source of the river Minjem, where we camped for the night.

Early the following morning we commenced to ascend the mountain on our side of the river, taking a westerly direction. After cutting our way for many hours, towards evening we arrived at the summit, an altitude of 5,400 feet above the sea. This was the farthest inland point I reached, and was forty-two geographical miles from the coast. During the ascent of this mountain we met with many fruits, among which were raspberries and strawberries. One of our men was very ill the latter part of the journey, and had to be carried the last few hours. It was now nearly dark and the rain began to pour in torrents, and this continued without intermission until daylight on the following morning.

At 6 P.M. the thermometer registered 61° Fahrenheit, and it was with great difficulty we managed to keep ourselves warm. The next day was beautifully fine, and we were able for the first time during the expedition to get everything dried. Immediately after breakfast we sent five men with rifles and ten others to try and discover a village in the neighbourhood, and also to look for fresh water, as that which we discovered the night before, a short distance from the camp, proved to be very brackish.

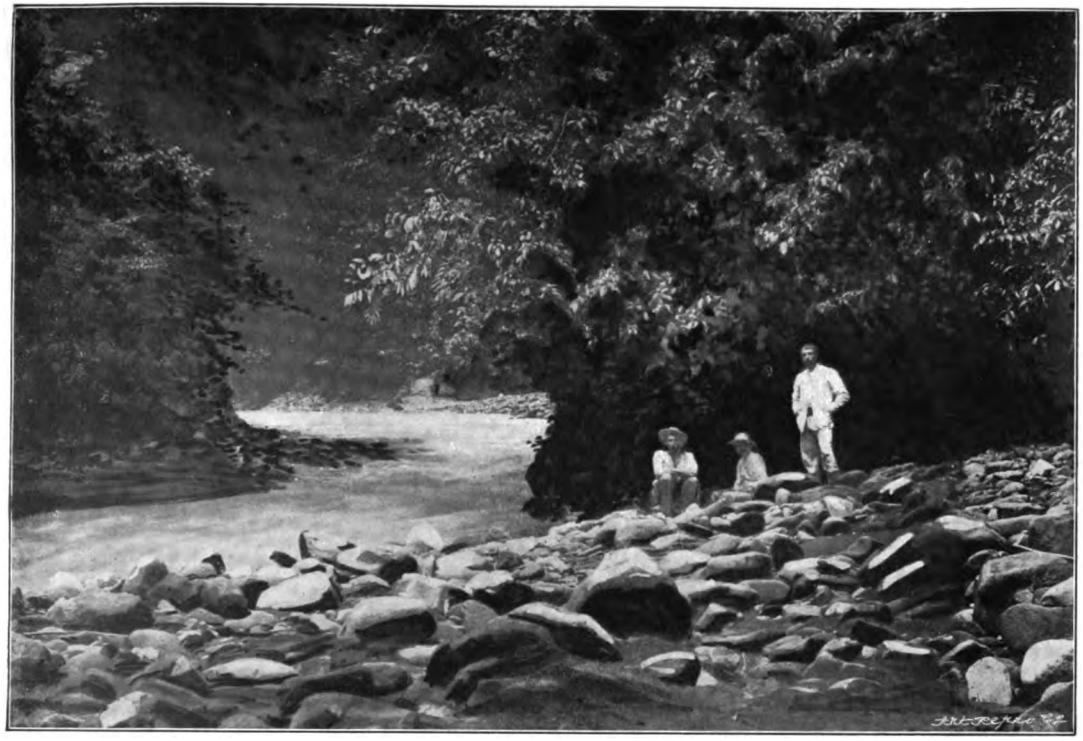
I looked in vain for the range of Bismarck Mountains marked on the chart, which should have been hereabouts, but could see nothing resembling anything of the kind at all, except that sixty miles in a south-south-easterly direction I observed a high range running east to west which I knew to be in British New Guinea. The whole day was

Digitized by Google

spent in clearing the top of the mountain to enable me to take proper observations of the surrounding country.

At dusk our people returned without having seen any natives, nor even signs of them, and the water they had discovered was too far off to be of any use. I sent them again the next day with the same ill success, and, therefore, having ascertained the true position of the Albert Victor range of mountains in British New Guinea, which was from here plainly discernible, and also the various landmarks on the coast of German New Guinea, it was useless to prolong our stay. I unhesitatingly assert that the range of mountains marked on the chart as in latitude 6° 10′, longitude 145–30 E., is not to be seen in that situation, and as we cannot change the configuration of the earth, perhaps it may be as well to alter the map, which I believe is now being done. I presume the mistake was caused by some who, ascending the coastal range in German New Guinea, situate some few miles from the coast, observing some high range in the interior, returned with the news that such a range existed, and proudly named it after the late ex-chancellor, when in all probability they were gazing at the Albert Victor range in British New Guinea.

Digitized by Google



SOURCE OF THE RIVER MINJEM.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

THE DESCENT — ONE MAN DIES — PHOTOGRAPH OF THE SOURCE OF THE RIVER — A GOOD DAY'S MARCH — WE SEND TO DUMBU FOR FOOD — HARDLY ANY OBTAINABLE — HOSTILE NATIVES — THE LOVE OF RED PAINT — DUMBU VILLAGE — A NARROW ESCAPE — WE SHOOT A WILD BOAR — DISSATISFIED NATIVES — ATTACKED BY NATIVES — WE KILL ONE MAN IN THE ACT OF DRAWING HIS BOW — ARRIVE BACK ON THE COAST — SEVERE ATTACK OF FEVER — RETURN TO FREDERICHWILHELMSHAFEN — WITNESS A CHRISTENING — A NATIVE DANCE — NATIVE FEAST — TASTY MORSELS — WE BID FAREWELL.

On April the 13th we started on our return journey at 6 A.M., with the thermometer registering 56° Fahrenheit. The sick man unfortunately died when we were about half way down, and we buried him underneath some leaves. On arriving at the river we rested for an hour or so and photographed its source.

To our great delight we found the river had fallen very much during our absence on account of the fine weather, and we managed to pick our way for some distance along the rocks instead of through the forest. Later in the day, however, and for some hours we were obliged to wade waist-deep in the river. At 5 P.M. we camped, drenched to the skin, for it had been raining heavily since two o'clock.

Digitized by Google

This was the longest march we had as yet made, and had covered in one day what on the way up took us three to accomplish. The next morning we struck our old tracks and travelled in a north-easterly direction towards the village of Dumbu, camping that night on the bank of a stream about two miles from that village. It was our intention to remain here for a few days for the purpose of collecting some specimens of natural history.

I sent half a dozen men to Dumbu for food, and they returned with a very few bad taros, having paid very dearly for them.

Early on the following day we sent Piering with twelve men to again solicit provisions, and the day being tolerably fine we one and all dispersed in the forest to see what we could find, but I am sorry to say the result was anything but satisfactory, no particular novelties being added to our collections. At 4 P.M. Piering returned with not enough for a meal, as the natives were indisposed to part with anything more, the fact of the matter being that they had very little else to sell, and had it not been for the influence of the women who still wanted more red paint and beads, he might have received even a more unfavourable reception. At times there is no difficulty in obtaining a stock of taros, yet, let the suspicion or the fear of the native be aroused from almost any cause, and he refuses to trade offhand.

In such cases he does not look to his own advantage in the way of profit, nor does humanity prompt him to keep the wolf from the door of his fellow creature. In such cases he has a lofty scorn for the stranger's substitute for gold or whatever may be the temporary means of exchange and barter. But once let him be inclined for a deal and his greed for red paint knows no bounds. The Papuan of New Guinea dearly loves red paint, it is more

Digitized by Google

DUMBU VILLAGE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

to him than rouge to the actress or woad to our British ancestors when Cæsar first visited these shores. For a handful of red paint one may obtain sufficient bread stuff and vegetables of the country to stock a Covent Garden market. Nor should the traveller omit to carry a goodly supply of salt. In the lack of that commodity the natives resemble those Mexicans whom Cortes first met with in the earlier days of the conquest of Mexico. I remember on one occasion we were mixing some salt with flour previous to breadmaking. I gave a small pinch to a native standing close by; he at once put it in his mouth and made manifest signs of keenly appreciating the foreign dainty, the first of its kind he had ever tasted. Rushing off to the far end of the village he quickly returned accompanied by the entire population, who, like Oliver Twist, did not scruple to ask for more.

It was with much reluctance that we decided to move on, having only our own provisions to rely upon, which were now getting rather low. During the day I came across stinging-nettles, rose briers, a species of quince, maiden-hair ferns, and the laurustinus in the forest. The natives of Dumbu, on our second visit, appeared anything but friendly, in fact they were decidedly hostile, both old and young being armed with spears, bows, and arrows. I had luckily obtained, however, a photograph of the village and some of the inhabitants on our previous visit, though not without considerable difficulty. Manifestly the natives held the camera in wholesome dread, either as a fetish or as an implement of the white man's armoury, which might go off at any minute and kill them on the spot; hence they scuttled off in all directions, and we had no little trouble to induce the bravest of them to return and submit to the ordeal by lens. At length by persuasion and free gifts of tobacco, and by my standing amongst them, we induced some few

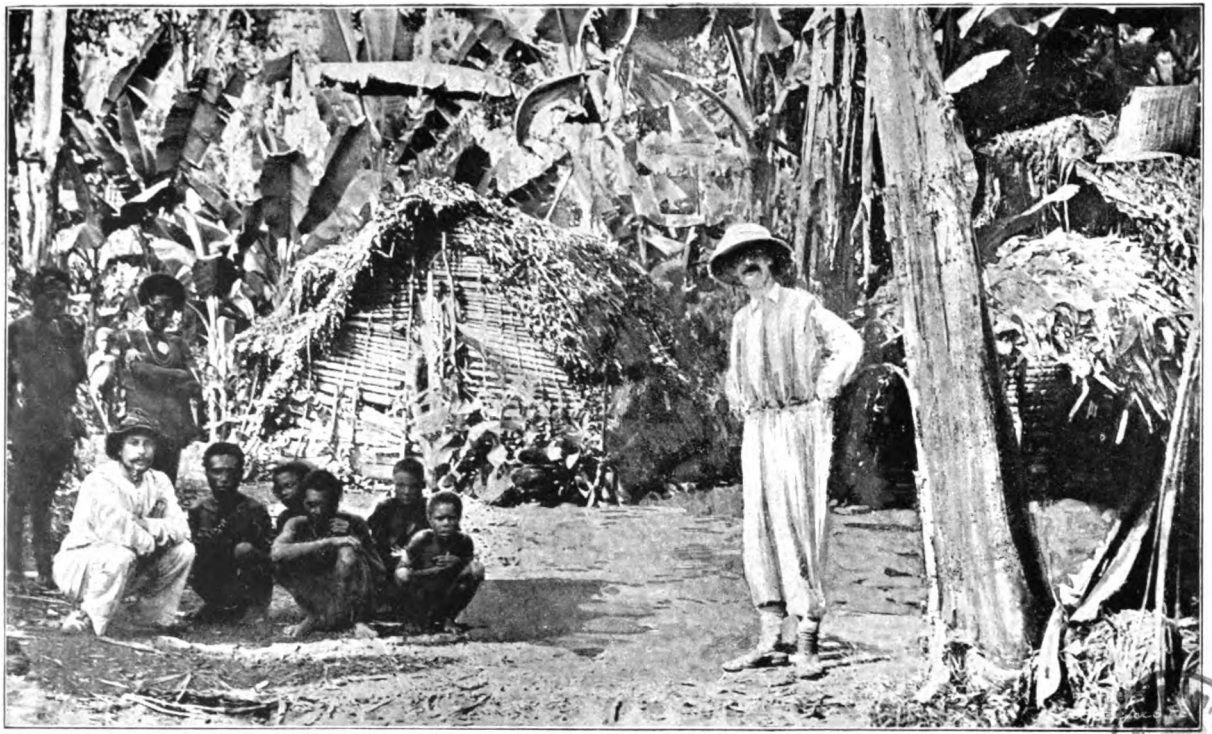
Digitized by Google

to come back, and were thus enabled to procure a photograph, which was taken by my own native servant.

On the 16th of April, therefore, at 6 A.M., although it was raining heavily we struck camp and marched on to Dumbu. About half a mile before reaching the village we discovered that the natives had obstructed the track with trees, rocks, &c., whereupon we formed an advance and rearguard of military police. Arriving at the village the natives were seen in all the paraphernalia for fighting, and armed to the teeth with spears, bows and arrows. We halted for a few minutes in the village, and took no notice of them whatever, determining not to fight unless absolutely necessary. Luckily they did nothing, and so after a short time spent for refreshment we pushed on to the village of Jillim, where our reception was in marked contrast to that of Dumbu. The natives here were delighted to see us again, jumping, running, and rolling on the ground. They immediately brought us taros, sugar-cane, and native bananas. We pitched our tent in the centre of the village, a large house being placed at the disposal of the men.

The next morning, the 17th, we were forced to wade again for many hours down a river, as the forest was impenetrable. Captain Cotton had a most marvellous escape from drowning, as suddenly missing his foothold he was carried down by the torrent at terrific speed, and only escaped certain death by becoming entangled in a fallen tree, which lay partially across the river. That evening we discovered the loss of two hundred pounds of beef, which had been eaten surreptitiously by the bearers, considerably diminishing our supply. I found the natives of Buka exercised a most demoralising effect on all our other men, and although they had been trained as native police, with very few exceptions they were a lazy, thieving, and disobedient lot; one of them, never-

Digitized by Google



OURSELVES AT DUMBU.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

theless, named "Ranga," was a very good boy indeed; I used him principally to cut the track, and when given a certain direction to travel seldom deviated from the course, however dull the day or dense and dark the forest.

During the afternoon one of the men shot a wild boar, which, on our arriving at the village of Vittib some hours later, was claimed by the natives as their property. Having no brand or ear-mark of any sort I knew this to be untrue, but still, not desiring to quarrel with them, gave them what they asked in payment for it, viz., one axe and a little red paint. There was great rejoicing that night, and much excitement among the men over the cooking of it.

On the 18th we were up early, and soon arrived at Wiengi, where we found the whole village in arms against us. I at once demanded the reason, and was told that we had killed and eaten a pig on the previous day that belonged to them. This was, of course, ridiculous; but still wishing, if possible, to avoid hostilities, I inquired what they wanted, and, strangely enough, the same payment was asked that had already been paid, of course proving that communication had been made during the night between them and the Vittib people. We gave them what they wanted and recommenced our journey, but had not proceeded more than two hundred yards when they made a most desperate attack on us from the rear, a shower of spears and arrows falling thickly amongst us. I was then obliged to order the military police to fire, but to aim high and only to frighten them, the result being the retirement of the enemy without many casualties. But one man was shot whilst in the act of drawing his bow, the bullet running up his left arm, across his chest, and half-way down his right arm.

Digitized by Google

We then struck off in a north-easterly direction to a small river, about three miles farther on, where we camped for the night.

We remained in the same camp all the following day, as it poured with rain, and I was attacked with fever, which lasted until late in the evening; but on the 20th, at 6.30, we struck camp for the last time, and at twelve o'clock

MAN AND WOMAN.

reached Stephensort. We had hardly arrived before my companion and I were both seized with malaria, and for some days were unable to move out of the house, but on the 25th we managed to take the steam launch to Frederichwilhelmshafen, taking with us all our men and all our luggage. Here again, as guests of his Excellency, we awaited the arrival of the ss. *Lubeck*. My companion again collapsed, and became so ill that he

Digitized by Google

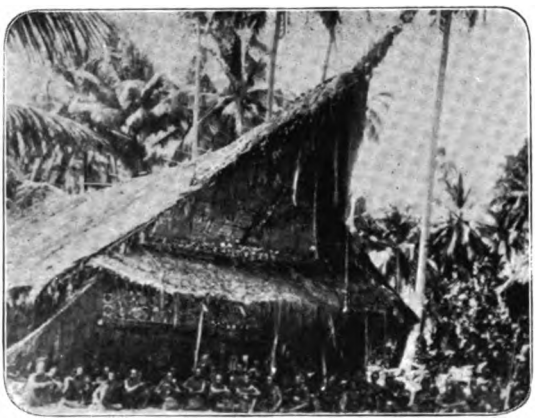
decided to go into the excellent hospital, to be there nursed by the kind sisters.

On the occasion of this visit his Excellency the Governor rowed me across the harbour to a village named Sear, situated on the coast a mile or so from Frederich-welhelmshafen, where the natives were holding a great entertainment. It happened that a child had just been born, and according to native custom, on the day of the birth of an infant all women of the village assemble at the house of the mother, where they remain the whole night through, dancing and singing dolefully. The next morning the mother takes the child into the sea, if they are coast natives, and if not into a water hole, and after washing both herself and her offspring she returns to the village, where the oldest or most influential woman names it, sometimes after a tree, an animal, or a fish, but more generally a name is given of an indecent nature. His Excellency the Governor had on more than one occasion been requested to name a child, and in this instance he named the baby after his own sister. There was also a dance taking place, and the Governor himself was desirous of witnessing this sing-sing, the more especially as there were visitors from Dampier, an island nearly twenty miles away.

In the centre of the village, ranged in a long line, were several heaps of large and beautifully constructed earthen pots. On the top of each heap the chief laid various articles, such as grass clothing for the women and ornaments, spears, &c., for the men, having accomplished which he then went down the line, and striking the first heap with a rattan which he carried in his hand, called out the names of the visitors for whom it was intended as a present, at the same time saying a few appropriate words. This was repeated at each heap until the last, and by far the most valuable one, was

Digitized by Google

reached, when addressing himself to the visiting chief, whose gift it was to be, he made a very elaborate speech, lasting quite ten minutes. Of course, although it was quite gibberish to me, I was fully satisfied that whatever the subject of his discourse might be, he was at least a most fluent speaker, and I was quite surprised at this wild and cannibal savage speaking with all the pathos and apparent learning of a politician. This ended, enormous bowls were filled with cooked pig, dog, and other mixtures, as well as



THE VISITORS' HOUSE, NEW GUINEA VILLAGE.

yams, taros, and sago, covered with scraped cocoanut. This savoury mixture was presented to the visitors, but as they were so long picking and choosing their pieces, all hands and feet being in the bowls at once we did not wait to witness the repast, but came away. I may mention that it is the visitors who, on these occasions, do all the dancing and entertaining, some of their dances taking many months to learn.

In the event of one man abducting the wife of another he is compelled to pay a certain sum in native money to

Digitized by Google

the injured husband. This satisfactorily terminates the proceedings. The woman may, or may not approve of this arrangement, but as she is simply so much property she has no voice in the matter.

I cannot close this chapter, which ends my visit to German New Guinea, without saying that his Excellency the Governor, who I am sorry to say is since dead, proved himself a most hospitable friend. Frederichwilhelmshafen which, as I have said before, was then the seat of the Government and the head-quarters of the New Guinea Company, has since been abandoned, and there is nothing, I believe, to mark the spot, which once was a fair-sized settlement, but a few ruined remains of houses and many heaps of empty tins and bottles, which by now I have no doubt are entirely hidden by the long, rank grass and thick jungle.

To sum up the result of my expedition to the interior, here I saw many strange places and extra-ordinary people, so far unknown to the white man's experience. The country passed through and seen for many miles round is, in my opinion, far too mountainous and difficult of access to ever prove useful for cultivating purposes. The soil in the interior is in some parts rocky, in some of clay, but altogether far more heavy than that on the coast.* I made a number of barometrical and thermometrical observations. We collected a great many species of entomological and ornithological specimens, and finally, the journey was not by any means barren, as I have before stated in a previous chapter, from a geographical standpoint.

* It is not my intention here to describe fully the customs and manners of the Papuans of New Guinea, but if my readers will bear with me till the second part of this volume, I will endeavour to depict the natives of this, the largest island in the world, as I found them.

Digitized by Google

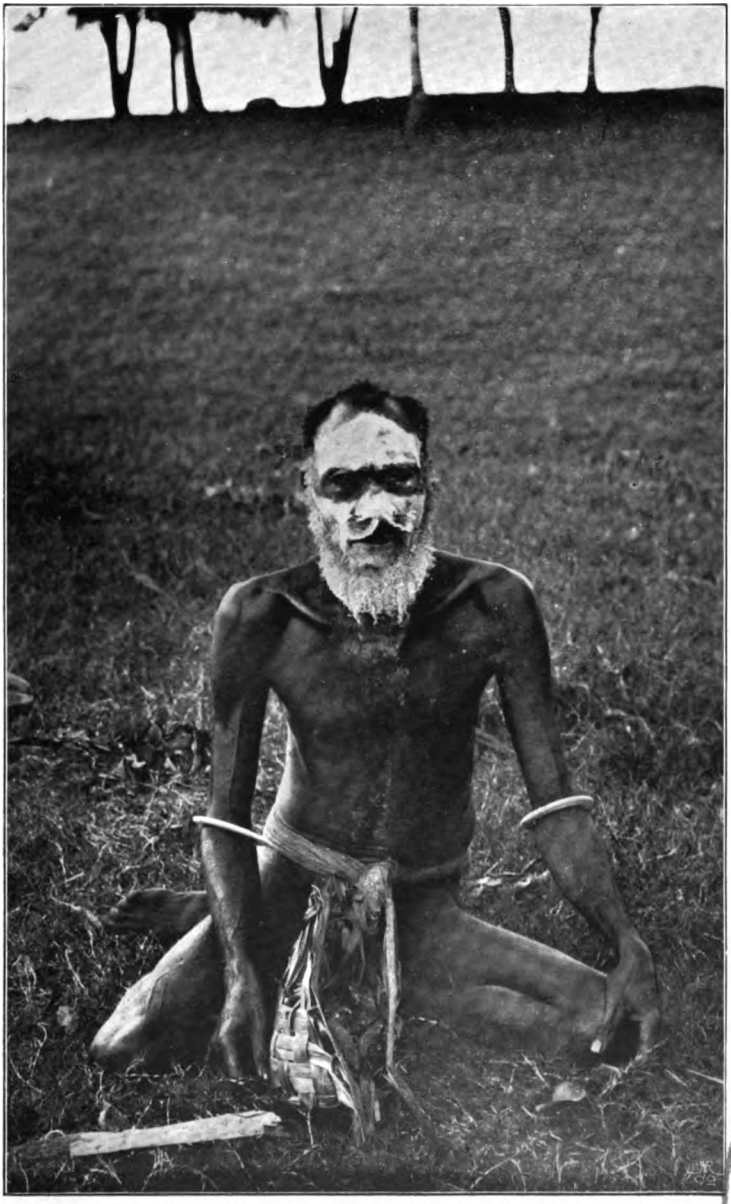
CHAPTER VIII.

NEW BRITAIN—THE IMPERIAL JUDGE TAKEN FOR A PUBLICAN — HERBERTSÖH — RALUM — THE PLANTATIONS OF MRS. KOLBE—CANNIBALISM—THRILLING ESCAPE—NATIVE DANCE—ARRIVAL OF THE MAN-OF-WAR—DESTRUCTION OF NATIVE VILLAGES—A CLEVER NATIVE—A BULLET-PROOF OINTMENT—MORE DEVICES FOR RAISING THE WIND—NATIVE MARKET.

On May 4th the *Lubeck* arrived, and bidding farewell to our friends and thanking the Governor for all his kindness, we set sail for New Britain, arriving there on the 11th instant. The first news we heard here was of an outrageous attack just made on the New Guinea Company's schooner *Senta*, when the mate, two white and several black men were surprised and massacred. They were at the time recruiting labour for the tobacco plantations, off the island of New Ireland, and whilst in the ship's boat close to the beach they were suddenly surrounded and tomahawked to death.

The imperial judge, Captain Brandeis, invited us to stay with him, and that evening told us that just before our arrival a Norwegian vessel had come there. The captain came ashore, and seeing on his right an open house with wide verandah and large round table on it, mistook it for the hotel, and entering called for an attendant. The judge's own Malay servant stepping forward asked, "Apa ma, tuan?" being the Malay for

Digitized by Google



A WEALTHY CHIEF FROM THE INTERIOR WITH UPPER LIP SLIT AND EACH HALF SEWN UP INTO HIS NOSTRILS AS ORNAMENTATION.

Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k. Kriegs Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RALUM, NEW BRITAIN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

"What do you want, sir?" The captain, who did not understand a word, hit it off very nicely by shouting "Beer," one of the only words of English the Malay boy understood. Finding it nice and cool he very soon called for a second bottle, and whilst in the act of drinking it the judge returned home, and bowing politely to the visitor said he was pleased to find that he made himself at home. The old salt, taking him for the landlord, invited him to take a glass, which invitation was

TYPE OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVE.

courteously accepted. After a pleasant chat, and drinking yet another bottle, on which occasion the judge acted the part of host, the old Norwegian pulled out his purse and asked how much he had to pay, when the judge, with a merry twinkle in his eye, informed him that it was his private house, and that although he was the imperial judge it gave him very great pleasure to entertain him. The poor man was quite overcome, and after many apologies retired covered with confusion.

Herbertsöh, which is the only port in New Britain, is

Digitized by Google

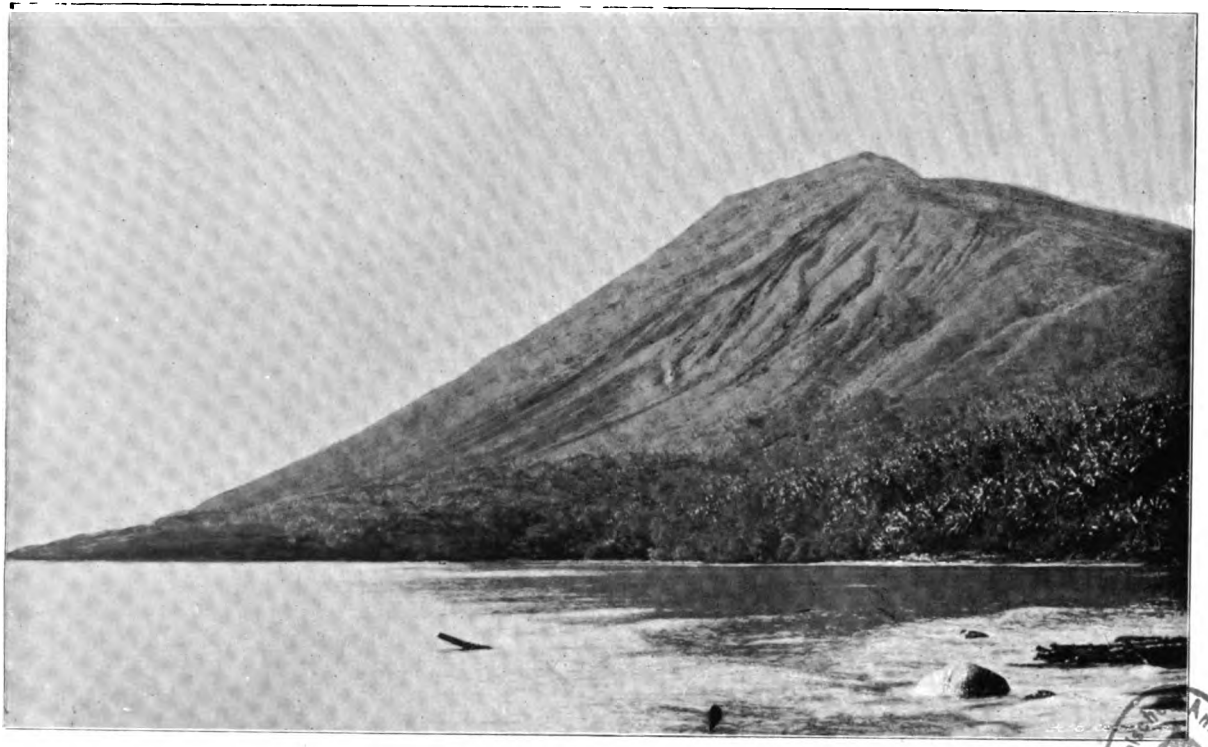
the headquarters of the German New Guinea Company in that country. Situated at the entrance to Blanche Bay, it commands a beautiful view of the Duke of York Islands, New Ireland, and the volcanoes on the north coast of New Britain.

A mile or so farther down the bay will be found Ralum, by far the finest and most valuable plantation in the South Seas. It is owned by a half-caste Samoan lady. Started many years ago by the present

TYPE OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVE.

owner's late husband, and also her brother-in-law, it consists of many thousand acres of rich, undulating land. At present the staple products are cocoanuts and cotton. There are, however, still thousands of acres to be cleared and planted, and its value a few years hence will be at least doubled, as every year thirty thousand young cocoanut trees are planted. It is Mrs. Kolbe's intention to import cattle from Australia, and fatten them for the Singapore and Javanese markets. The climate, moreover, is as nearly perfect as possible, and the fever, which rages in New Guinea, is of rare occurrence here.

Digitized by Google

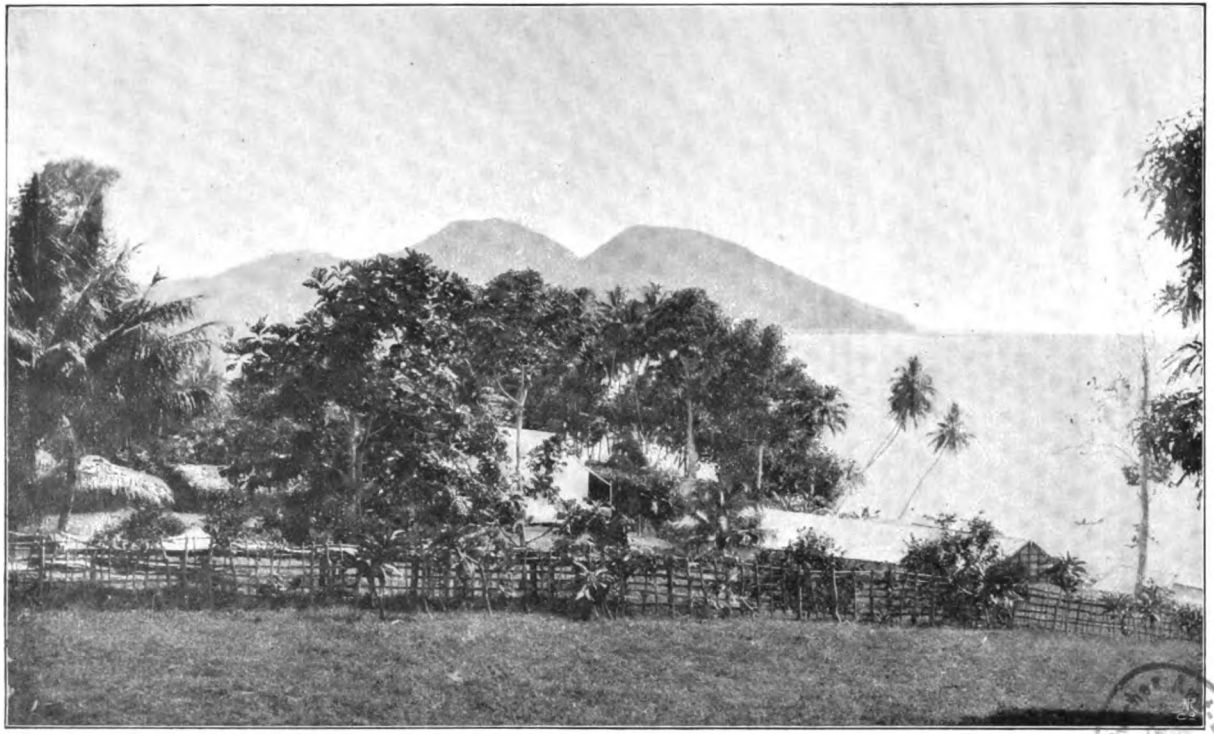


THE VOLCANO, BLANCHE BAY.

Digitized by Google

K.u.K. Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-Marine

Digitized by Google



BLANCHE BAY, NEW BRITAIN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

NATIVE CHIEF, NEW BRITAIN.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Mrs. Kolbe and her sister, Mrs. Parkinson, are, as I have said before, half-caste Samoan ladies, their father, an American gentleman, having settled some five and forty years ago in Apia, Samoa. It would be impossible to speak in terms too high of the kindness and hospitality we met with at their hands, and Mr. Parkinson, who is the manager of the estate, did everything in his power to make our visit a pleasant one. Besides the plantation itself, there are many large outlying trading stations, managed by European traders, and are all owned by Mrs. Kolbe. Some of these stations are many hundreds of miles from Ralum, the most remote ones being in the Mortlock group. The houses on the estate are beautifully situated above the shores of the bay, and are most picturesque edifices, furnished throughout with beautiful taste, and one can almost imagine oneself inside a country residence of Western civilisation rather than in the wilds of a cannibal country—for the natives here may be classed as amongst the most ferocious cannibals of the South Pacific. Within a mile or two of Ralum one may find even to-day chiefs who keep slaves for the purpose of food, and who are in the habit of killing them every few days to satisfy their diabolical tastes. Not only do they do this, but they boast of it, and I have had these people come and tell me how they have enjoyed their feast on the previous evening, which had been some portion of a human being.

Some few years ago, these ladies with whom we stayed, and whose houses are but a few minutes' distance from one another, during the absence of the manager, were approached by some three or four hundred natives from the interior, half the number surrounding one house and the rest the other. They swarmed on to the verandahs, armed with spears, bows and arrows and tomahawks, their intention being to carry each lady

Digitized by Google

off into the bush, for what purpose I will leave to the imagination of my readers. Mrs. Parkinson managed to send by a black boy a message to her sister stating that she intended to hold out to the last, and exhorting her to do likewise. Fortunately each of these women was without fear, hence their ultimate safety. Supported by three or four house-boys, Mrs. Parkinson boldly stepped forward, and, speaking to the ringleaders, informed them that she would shoot the first man who took one step in her direction. On a movement being made she

THE CRATER.

fired, killing the two foremost of the party. Thereupon the others turned and ignominiously fled, and the people of the other house, hearing the shots, did likewise.

Mrs. Parkinson to-day could walk through the whole country unarmed and unattended, for that occurrence apparently inspired such respect that the natives for many miles round worship the very ground she walks upon.

One morning, accompanied by the manager of the estate, I rowed across the bay to the volcanic mountain on the opposite side. After an hour's pull we arrived

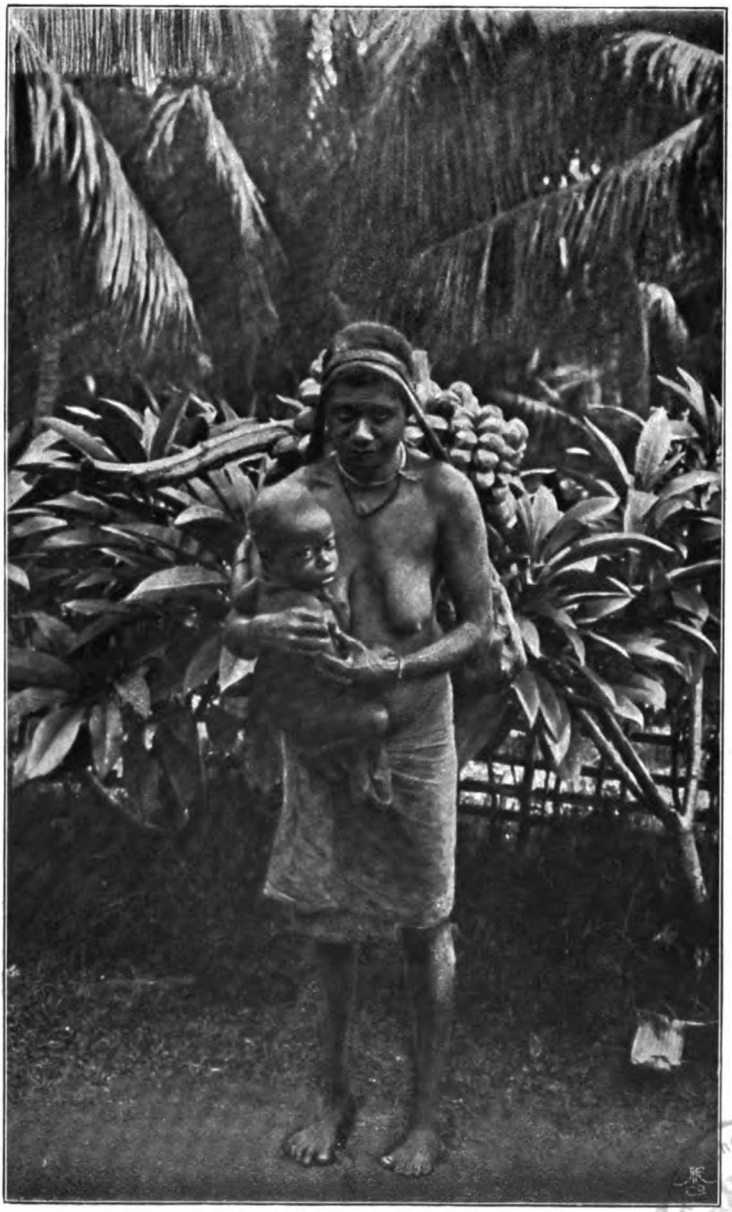
Digitized by Google

NATIVE MARKET, RALUM.

Digitized by Google

K.u.K. Hydrographisches Amt. Bibliothek. Kriegs Marine.

Digitized by Google



NATIVE MODE OF CARRYING.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

at the foot, where we landed and began to ascend, collecting many specimens of natural history on the way up. About fifty minutes' hard climbing brought us to the mouth of the crater, which on this occasion was quiescent. I took a photograph of the crater and also of the magnificent view lying at my feet.

Farther in towards the head of the bay is the island of Matupi, on which is to be found the coaling-station for steamers and men-of-war visiting this part of the South Seas. There is also established on the island the head trading-station of the German firm of Messrs. Hernsheim, who also collect copra. Copra is the dried kernel of the cocoanut, from which oil is extracted.

The natives split the nut in half, and, taking out the kernel, hang it under cover and smoke-dry it, afterwards threading it on strings of rattan—ten on each. It is then ready for the trader. "The ten on a string" is the standard of all trade. My readers will doubtless be aware that this product is valuable for its oil. Sun-dried copra is better than that prepared in this manner; but the treacherous and inclement nature of the climate in these latitudes prevents the natives from adopting this mode of curing.

Whilst we were in New Britain the white people were experiencing a considerable amount of trouble from the natives, and it was not until after the arrival of a man-of-war, and a company or two of blue-jackets had marched into the interior and had killed several and burned down their villages, that they were left unmolested. It appears that a native had induced them to fight by offering for sale a substance, the virtue of which rendered him whose body was be-smeared with it bullet proof. He exhorted the natives to buy it from him and go down and fight, saying, "Let us kill the white men and live in their houses." To prove his

Digitized by Google

stuff was genuine, he painted some one with his mixture, and, holding up a bullet, he substituted for it a berry not unlike it in appearance, and, inserting it into the muzzle of an old gun fired at the man, of course without injuring him. By this means he collected many hundreds of pounds worth of "dewarra" (native money), and had it not been for the timely arrival of the man-of-war might still be doing a good trade.

The fame of this marvellous discovery spread far and wide, and natives flocked from all the villages within many miles to possess themselves of the ointment. The fellow became enormously rich, but the war breaking out, and several natives who had anointed themselves being killed, his life was in imminent peril from his own countrymen, and he repaired to Ralum, where he sought protection and where I met him. This fellow was far too clever to be a cannibal savage, for on a previous occasion he had devised a plan which to our ears is, if possible, more ludicrous than his life-preserving ointment—that of collecting unto himself the riches of this world. This also was an ointment, a modicum of which had to be swallowed, and if a receptacle was then hung up in a tree and left there for one moon (one month) the owner would find it filled with dewarra at the end of the stated time. Of course at the end of the month no money had arrived, when the victim would approach and interrogate the owner of the marvellous drug.

"Ah!" he would say, "you must have eaten betel-nut" (knowing the usual habit of his fellow creatures); "that is the reason the 'tabaran' (evil spirit) has not sent you any money. Now go and hang it again for six moons and you will find it full, but first give me a fathom more for this small quantity."

In this way, and by many similar subterfuges, the natives were imposed upon, and the owner of the rubbish

Digitized by Google

A NEW BRITAIN CHIEF.

Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k.Kriegs-Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RICH CHIEF IN THE INTERIOR WITH HIS WIVES AND CHILDREN.

Hydrograph. Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k. Kriegs Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

became rich at the expense of his foolish and unsophisticated fellow-countrymen.

Every third day the natives were in the habit of coming down from the bush with many articles of produce for sale—taros, yams, bread-fruit, bananas, eggs of the meyapodium (a species of jungle fowl), and all alike found a ready market at Ralum. This traffic is always carried on by the women, and the loads they carry slung over their backs in bags or baskets, which are hung from their foreheads by a narrow band of fibre, would in every instance surprise a strong man of civilisation, the more especially as the majority of them carry these burdens in some cases as many as ten or twelve miles, returning the same distance on the same day. They wear, for the most part, no clothing whatever, are one and all exceedingly dirty, the majority suffering from a skin disease which is called the cus-cus, a disease very prevalent throughout the South Seas. They are, with very few exceptions, very uncomely to look upon, differing very much from the women of better features from New Ireland, only a few miles distant.

Although some hundreds come down with their produce, for which they are invariably paid in tobacco or dewarra, they do not bring nearly enough food to provide for all the labour coolies employed on the plantation, and Mrs. Kolbe is obliged to send boats for many miles up and down the coast daily for taros and yams wherewith to feed her people, there being more than a thousand hands employed.

We were obliged to remain here for some weeks, as the date was not known when a ship would arrive to take us on to the Solomon Islands, our destination after leaving New Britain. And a most enjoyable visit it was ; from a naturalist's point of view also it was singularly successful, amongst the many things new to science being a

Digitized by Google

beautiful papilio, which has since been described and named the Papilio Websteri.

Mrs. Parkinson took me for many excursions into the interior, and on one occasion to the village of a very influential chief, a hoary-headed old scoundrel, who had the deaths of many people on his conscience, if he had such a thing, and one of the most ferocious cannibals in that part of the country. This man was holding a great festivity, and the village, as I approached it through the forest, resembled somewhat a large country fair. Huge chains of various coloured crotons and flowers strung together hung from tree to tree, the trunks of which were encircled by garlands of beautiful creepers. Upwards of three thousand natives were assembled from all parts, and many hundreds of them were covered with leaves, which, together with their paint and their enormous feather head-dresses, imparted to them a most imposing, but at the same time wild, appearance. The whole scene was quite the most unique I had witnessed in the country.

The performers themselves were all assembled, as it were, behind the scenes; a large screen of ferns and flowers had been erected for the purpose. At the sound of the tom-tom each tribe in its turn came forward and performed its dance, and with their fierce noises and many extraordinary gyrations, one could not help but experience a feeling of awe. The dance is the private property of the chief of each village, who either designs it himself or purchases it from some neighbouring warrior.

On the one side were the women and children of the many different villages, squatting, as none but natives can squat, on their hams—indulging probably in the latest village gossip; but not one of them, as far as I could see, exhibiting the slightest interest in the performance which was being enacted in front of them. On the other

Digitized by Google

A NATIVE DANCE, NEW BRITAIN.

Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k.Kriegs Marine-Hydrograph

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

GATHERING OF NEW BRITAIN NATIVES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

side were the men chewing their betel-nut and applauding the various performances as they appeared on the scene. In the centre was erected an enormous screen, about forty feet in height, on which were hung countless coils of dewarra, each coil being worth £25 in English money. This dewarra, which is the native money of New Britain, is comprised of a particular kind of small shell, resembling the cowrie. These are bored and strung together on narrow strips of cane. It is very much sought after by the natives, as with it they purchase their wives, their slaves, pigs, and in fact all articles of trade. A fathom of this shell money is worth 2s., and when 250 fathoms are gathered together they are formed into a coil very skilfully laced up with cane or rattan, giving it the appearance of a huge lifebuoy. On this screen were also hung innumerable ornaments and trophies, such as skulls of vanquished enemies, spears, &c.

All this property, I was told, at the death of this chief, as is invariably the custom, would be equally divided amongst his relations, but would not go to his own children, who were expected to look out for themselves during his lifetime. It is the custom of the chief to present any distinguished visitor with one or two fathoms of dewarra, which are to signify his pleasure at their presence ; but in the case of all ordinary people attending the festivity he has the right of levying a small tax in payment for the entertainment. I have been told that certain native missionary teachers, who were unable to procure the attendance of the people in any other way, have instituted such dances, styling them religious festivals, and thereby obtaining large quantities of dewarra, and by this means have procured as much as £400 in one year. It was also said that this practice was not confined to the native teachers alone, but as to its truth I did not trouble to ascertain. Having received

Digitized by Google

my two fathoms, and thanking the chief for the pleasure I had experienced at so strange a gathering and heaping many compliments upon him, not a word, of course, of which he understood, and presenting him with a real Havana, I took my leave well pleased with the day's outing. I may say, nevertheless, that my hand hardly ever left my revolver, which was carefully hidden in my pocket, as I had been previously advised that the natives in this district were not quite reconciled to the white man for having burned down their villages only a week or two previously.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

BISHOP COUPÉ AND HIS CHILDREN—THE BOYS.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

BISHOP COUPÉ—ROMAN CATHOLIC MISSION—FAREWELL TO NEW BRITAIN—AN ILL-FATED EXPEDITION—ON THE WAY TO THE SOLOMON ISLANDS—ARRIVE AT RUBIANA—SUICIDE OF A NATIVE GIRL—MURDER OF A TRADER—THE TRADERS—A VISIT FROM INGOVA, THE GREATEST CHIEF IN NEW GEORGIA—A TRIP UP THE RUBIANA LAGOON—MEET WITH UNFRIENDLY NATIVES—PHOTOGRAPHY UNDER DIFFICULTIES.

WHILST we were in New Britain we received an invitation from Monseigneur Coupé, the Roman Catholic bishop and the head of the Sacred Heart Mission in New Britain, to lunch with him, and we gladly availed ourselves of the opportunity of going over this excellent Mission. We spent a most delightful day, and after luncheon listened with much interest to an account of the formation and development of this religious sect here, and took one or two photographs of the children and also of the sisters attached there.

It appears this mission was founded as far back as 1845, when Bishop Epal, with twelve missionaries, sailed from Sydney to the Solomon Islands, landing first at St. Christoval. After a short visit, and not considering this a serviceable site for the establishment of the Mission, they sailed on to the island of Isobel, where they were at once attacked, the natives wounding the bishop and two of the missionaries. Unfortunately the former died three

Digitized by Google

days afterwards on board the ship. The survivors then returned to St. Christoval, where they at once formed a mission settlement. After a few months here one of the fathers died, and a ferocious attack made upon them by the natives resulted in the death of three more, who were eaten by the savages. The remaining few were besieged by the natives. This siege lasted for six months, but at the expiration of this time a vessel arrived from Australia with another bishop on board. Under cover of the darkness they managed to send a letter to the ship by a friendly native, informing the new comers of the state of siege in which they were, when a party at once went ashore and rescued them from their perilous situation. They then made sail and departed for Woodlark Island, and established themselves there. But discovering it to be too small a field for the labours of so many they separated, the bishop and some of the fathers going to Rook Island, off the coast of New Guinea, where a Mission was formed. Fever, however, raged to such an extent in both of these islands that they migrated to Fiji, where they remained for some time, the Italian Missionary Society there rendering them every possible assistance. Here the bishop died, and fever killing many more of them they abandoned the Mission for the time being. During many subsequent years the work of the Sacred Heart proceeded irregularly in this part of the world. But in 1889 the society sent out five missionaries to establish a distinct vicariat in New Britain under a bishop. For nearly a year and a half after their arrival they were forbidden by the German New Guinea Company to prosecute their ministrations or in any way to attempt to interfere with the natives. But after a huge amount of correspondence the permission was obtained from Berlin. In the meantime, however, it had been decided by the officials to establish distinct districts—one for the Protestant and

Digitized by Google

BISHOP COUPÉ'S CHILDREN—THE GIRLS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

another for the Catholic missionaries. Permission to do this had again to be obtained from the Foreign Office in Berlin, pending which the members of the Sacred Heart were obliged to refrain from all work and to remain inactive. About this time Bishop Coupé was appointed with the title of "Vicariat Apostolique" of New Britain. This comprised New Britain, Bismarck archipelago, British and German Solomons, and the Admiralty group.

In 1890 he visited Europe for the purpose of being consecrated, and went to Berlin to decide the question of district for the labours of his Mission. Again, during the whole time he was absent, the missionaries had to preserve a policy of masterly inactivity. Immediately on his return, however, the good work began, and has ever since been pushed forward with the greatest energy and success. The plan the bishop has adopted, and which to my mind is a most admirable one, is, firstly, to thoroughly educate the children in order to totally eradicate the old native habits and customs, and to establish an entirely new *régime*. The first stage of this curriculum consists in the adoption of as many small native children as possible, and giving them a good moral and secular education as far as their intelligence will permit. Secondly, to teach them thoroughly useful industries, trades, and agriculture, and thirdly, when they have arrived at a marriageable age they will be established in villages on the land which the Mission has already acquired from the natives. The Mission will endow each young couple with a certain amount of land, stock it with cattle, assist them in planting it with cocoanuts, and also in the building of a house. At the present moment both boys and girls are being well educated. They are obliged by law to be taught to read and write in German. Their comforts as regards clothes and food are thoroughly considered. Several brave ladies have left their friends

Digitized by Google

and homes and have come out to take charge of the little girls.

A large stone church is contemplated. Plans have already been drawn up by the bishop himself, and it is to be entirely built by the brothers of the Mission, who have left their native country for ever to propagate this good work. Mr. Parkinson, the manager of the Ralum estate, during our visit presented the Mission with several thousand acres of good land, lying within easy distance. This munificent gift was most thankfully received by the bishop, whose whole heart and soul is in his work.

One June 21st we embarked on a small schooner, having made arrangements with the captain to take us down to the Solomon Islands, and bidding farewell to all our kind friends at Ralum, set sail in the afternoon, anchoring next morning at Cocoanut Island, which adjoins the coast of New Ireland. Near here was the spot chosen by the members of the ill-fated Marquis de Ré expedition as their settlement. If my memory serves me rightly, this expedition was propagated some twenty-five years ago by a Frenchman, the Marquis de Ré, who collected an enormous sum of money in some French provinces, and led the more uneducated people to believe that he had discovered a country veritably flowing with milk and honey, where a new republic was to be formed and, apparently, every one was to be the president. Many thousands of poor deluded Frenchmen were carried away by the outrageous promises held out to them, and handing over the savings of their life-time, were put on board old and unseaworthy crafts, which had been chartered or bought for the purpose, their destination being New Ireland. Needless to say, a great number never reached that country at all, whilst others only arrived to be immediately killed by the natives. The prime mover in the scheme was subsequently arrested and suffered a term

Digitized by Google

SISTERS OF THE MISSION.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

NATIVE DANCE ON MRS. PARKINSON'S BIRTHDAY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of imprisonment, but I believe died before the expiration of his sentence. I have seen myself the remains of more than one of these ill-fated vessels, and I have also taken from the natives, who were wearing them as ornaments, a great many small bronze religious tokens, which had doubtless been stolen from the unfortunate victims of this expedition.

We lay at anchor here all night, but did not think it wise to go on shore, although a great many of the natives pressed us to do so. The next morning we made all sail for Alu, a small island off Shortland in the Solomon group; and after many days of contrary winds and calms, we arrived there on July 2nd.

Here we found an Englishman trading.

It had been our intention to remain here for a short time to collect specimens of natural history among the surrounding islands, viz., Bouganville, Choiseul, and Ysabel; but we found the trader was then in the act of building a new house, and literally had no accommodation to offer us, and so we decided to go on to Rubiana, where we were sure to find a hearty welcome from the Englishmen trading there. During the passage down we passed an Austrian man-of-war. They very kindly hailed us and asked us if we were in need of any provisions. Replying in the negative we kept on our course, but on account of the contrary winds it was many days ere we reached our destination.

One evening, at about 8.30, we witnessed a very beautiful sight: although quite dark the heavens were suddenly lit up by a perfect lunar rainbow stretching from horizon to horizon.

On the following Sunday we arrived at Nusa Sanga, a very small island lying at the entrance of the Rubiana lagoon and off the coast of New Georgia.

The next morning we took up our abode on the island under the hospitable roof of a young Australian who was trading there.

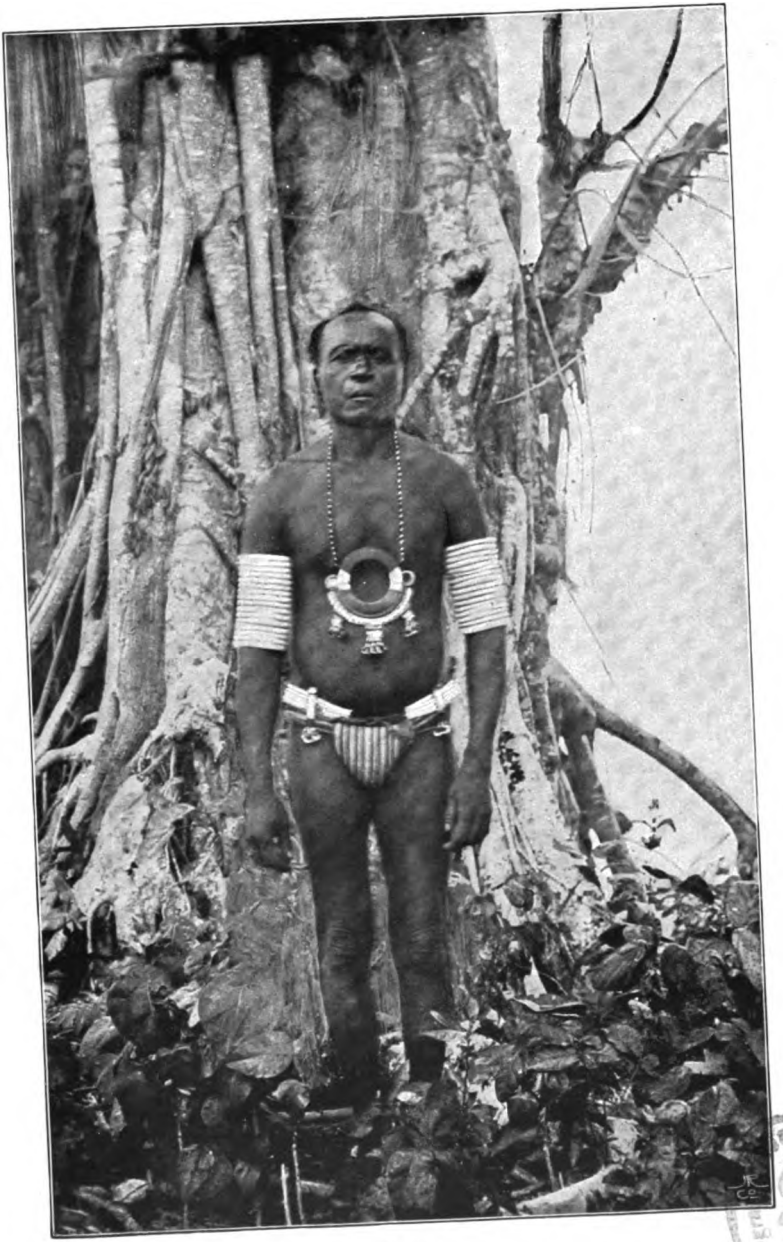
Digitized by Google

This island is only two acres in extent, and is one on which the British flag was hoisted when England recently undertook the protection of the Solomon Islands. We found the trader in great trouble, owing to the death of his housekeeper, which had occurred on the previous evening. She had successfully hanged herself from a beam in the house, it being the third attempt she had made upon her life. On the two previous occasions she had been cut down when in a dying condition. We heard, too, of the death of another young Englishman named Guy, who had been assassinated a few days previous to our arrival by the natives a few miles further up the lagoon, and his head was the only part of him our friends had been able to recover. This was a most diabolical murder, the more especially as Mr. Guy was very popular amongst all the natives. Unfortunately for him in this instance he allowed their canoes to come up on either side of his boat for the purpose of trading, and while in the act of stooping to pick up some articles of trade he was set upon from both sides and tomahawked to death.

These natives are not only head-hunters and cannibals, but make no secret of it whatever. They are the most treacherous of all the people of the South Seas, and when apparently on the most friendly terms are only awaiting a favourable opportunity to catch the stranger unawares, and to add one more head to their already huge collection. I may say that during the whole of my visit I hardly ever had my revolver out of my hand.

The morning after our arrival we received a visit from Ingova, the greatest chief and at one time the most successful head-hunter of Rubiana. He was a pleasant, intellectual man, and spoke pidjin English very well. He invited me to pay him a visit, when he said he would show me his canoe houses, his wives, and all his belongings.

Digitized by Google



INGOVA.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

VIEW IN THE RUBIANA LAGOON.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

He is on the most friendly terms with all the traders in the neighbourhood. After considerable persuasion, backed by some small presents, he allowed me to take his photograph.

The Rubiana lagoon, with its many thousands of cocoanuts waving along the beach, and the many villages dotted here and there along its shores at intervals of about half a mile, presents a most picturesque appearance, and one would scarcely believe that there was lurking amongst those waving cocoanuts and within those rustic-looking little houses a ferocious treachery entirely unknown to men of the civilised world.

During one of my collecting expeditions which I took daily to the mainland of New Georgia, and when some few miles from the coast, there suddenly sprang up before me about a dozen natives who appeared anything but friendly, and as I knew they had been unfortunate lately in their head-hunting excursions I considered discretion to be the better part of valour, and so hurriedly returned to the coast.

Our stay here was attended with much malaria, passing more than half the time in our beds. Nevertheless, a very fair collection of natural history specimens was taken.

The first English trader to be regularly established in this group, Fergusson by name, is buried on this island. He fell a victim to the treachery of these natives whilst trading amongst them, and I could mention a score of others who suffered a like fate.

One morning, when feeling free from fever, I made a short cruise up the lagoon and called upon a Mr. Wickham, who is one of the oldest traders in the group. After lunching with him, I proceeded a few miles further to the village of Panga Panga, where I managed to collect a few rare specimens of lepidoptera, and also took a photograph of the village, not without very great difficulty, as

Digitized by Google

all the men and women at first ran away after I had grouped them together, exclaiming, in their own language, that if they stood as I wished them to do they would all die.

The next village at which I stopped was Lillio, and here again, but not without some trouble, I snapped off a dusky beauty on the rocks.

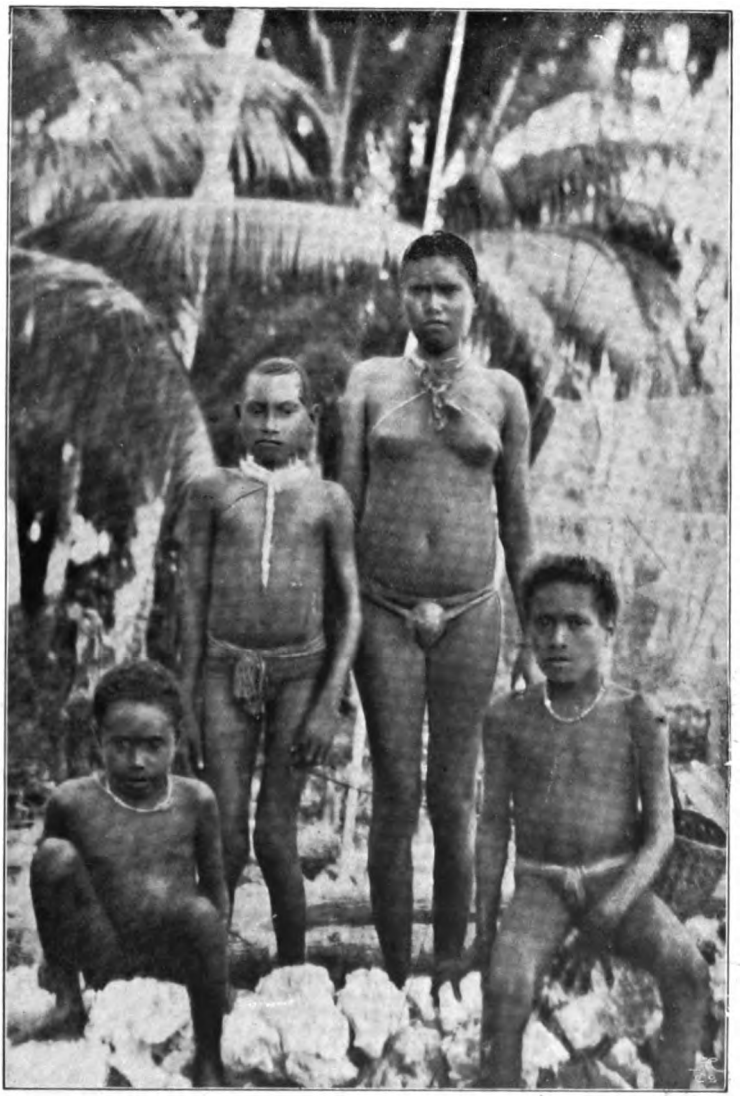
The sun fast sinking in the west reminded me that it was high time to be getting towards home. The boat in which I was was manned by eight or nine natives of Malita, another island of the Solomon group. They were fine, strapping young fellows, who under the circumstances would have defended me to the very last drop of their blood, but once let them have me on the shores of their own country and I am confident that they would not have scrupled to have taken my life.

Digitized by Google

PANGA PANGA VILLAGE IN RUBIANA LAGOON.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



NATIVE GIRLS OF LILLIO.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

THE FATE OF THE "ESPERANZA"—PREPARING FOR A DEATH FEAST—SOLOMON ISLAND WAR CANOES—A HOUSE OF SKULLS—WE VISIT THE ISLAND OF YSABEL—HOSPITABLE NATIVES—NATIVES WHO BUILD THEIR HOUSES ON TREE-TOPS.

A SHORT time ago a schooner named the *Esperanza* anchored in Ariel Cove, Kulabanga, an island near here, to trade with the natives for copra. There were two white men on board with twelve black sailors. The natives told them they had a large quantity that they would sell them in their copra houses, but they required the help of some of the men to carry it down to the beach. The traders unsuspectingly sent some of their men in the boat to fetch it. At a given signal from the shore the natives who were on the schooner suddenly seized the two Englishmen and tomahawked them to death, the crew suffering a like death at the hands of the people in the village. The ship was then looted and afterwards burned.

I believe a man-of-war has since been there to punish them, but as they invariably run into the bush on perceiving its smoke on the horizon little or no harm has been done to them, and until some more strenuous efforts are made to punish the natives for their wrong doings murders like this will be carried on daily throughout the South Sea Islands, and with impunity. The only punish-

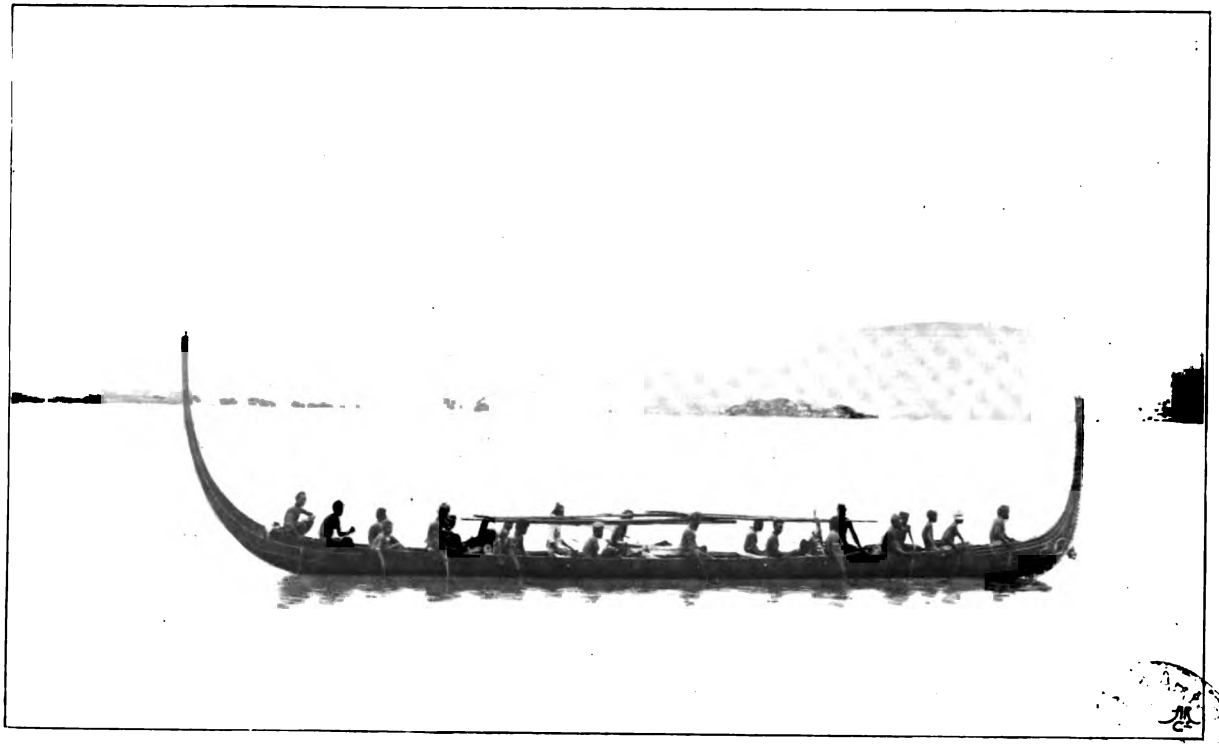
Digitized by Google

ment inflicted upon them up till now is the burning down of their houses, but as these are built of bamboo and palm-leaves tied together they are always re-erected in a few hours.* A few days before leaving I paid a visit to a village in the Rubiana lagoon, for the purpose of witnessing the ceremony of preparing for a feast, on account of the girl who had hanged herself. I entered a low-roofed house in the village, which, until my eyes became accustomed to the uncertain light, appeared to be in total darkness. After I had remained a few minutes within I discovered that there were at least fifty people lying on the ground, and picking my way amongst them I was directed to the spot set apart for the mother of the deceased girl. This woman, according to the custom of her country, was not allowed outside her house, nor allowed even to wash herself for a hundred and fifty days after the death of her daughter. My visit was paid on the thirtieth day after the occurrence, but even then there was so much dirt and filth caked upon her face and body that her features were entirely hidden, and the smell was almost unbearable.

Not long after this I paid a visit to Ingova, and he very kindly brought out and manned one of his war canoes, or Tomakos as they are called, for me to photograph. These canoes, of which he has seven or eight, are magnificently constructed without the aid of one single nail, the planks being laced together with rattan, and the whole covered over with a species of chinam. They are very much decorated with carvings and are inlaid with quaint designs in mother-of-pearl from stem to stern, and are capable of holding from fifty to sixty warriors. Whilst gazing wonderingly upon these beautiful specimens of uncivilised art, I

* Were the Government to send out such a man as Captain Davies, R.N., late of H.M.S. *Royalist*, and give him a free hand for two years, I thoroughly believe that head-hunting, murders, and other atrocities would cease to be enacted in this group.

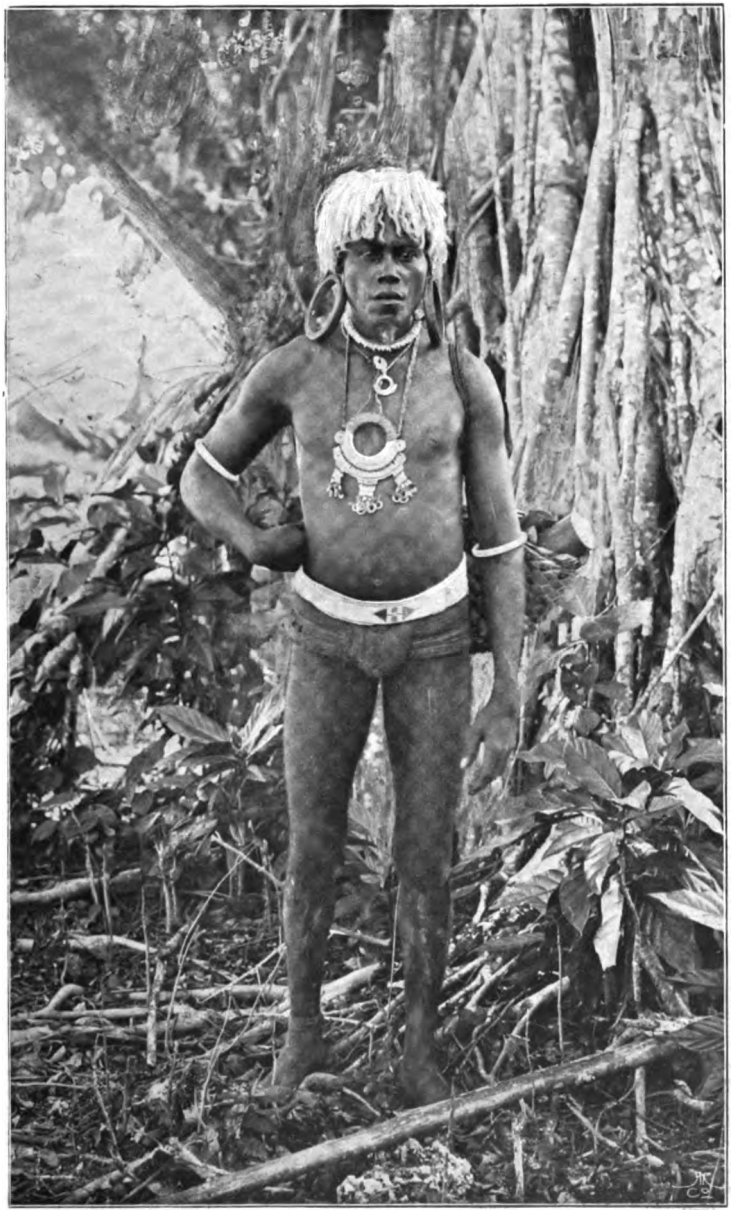
Digitized by Google



SOLOMON ISLAND WAR CANOE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



RUBIANA NATIVE SHOWING DISTENDED EARS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

observed a boy with very largely distended ear-lobes, and requested Ingova's permission to photograph him. This was immediately given, and the boy, who was terribly frightened throughout the ordeal, was rewarded with a stick of tobacco. The lobes of his ears had been pierced in infancy, and from time to time had had sticks thrust through them, each succeeding stick being larger than the last, until arriving at the age when I met him they had been stretched to such a degree that they were hanging on to his shoulders, and it was quite possible to pass a small dinner plate through each of them. Although it is the custom of all Solomon Islanders to practise this habit I had never seen so remarkable a case as this before.

I observed several large heaps of skulls under a dilapidated thatched roof behind the canoe house. This place is the village temple. I could not induce the chief to speak about it, nor would he for any remuneration whatever part with one of the skulls, which I presumed to be the heads of victims captured during one of his head-hunting expeditions.

On July 24th Mr. Wickham very kindly offered to take us for a week's cruise to Praslin harbour, on the north coast of the island of Ysabel.

After two days' sail through the Hawthorn Sound * we arrived at Po-po, a village in Ysabel standing upon rocks which rise up perpendicularly from the water, and look as inaccessible as the rock of Gibraltar. These natives, who are of a peaceful nature, were driven to build their village in this way owing to the hostility of the more warlike tribes further down the

* The name given to a harbour between New Georgia and the island of Wana-Wana. In most places in this sound no anchorage can be found, but vessels drawing any depth can tie up to the bank on either side. Formerly there was a store of coal kept here for her Majesty's ships, but now discontinued.

Digitized by Google

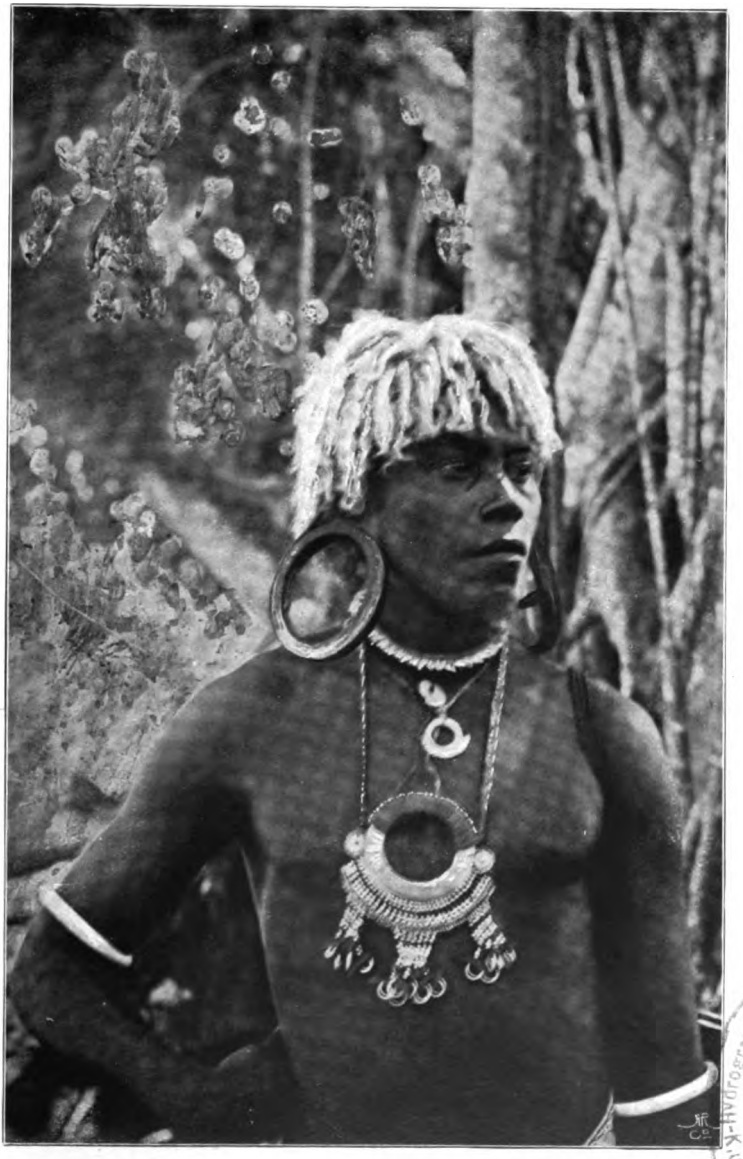
coast. After some hours of hard climbing we arrived at the top, where we received a hearty welcome from the people of the village. The view which presented itself from this point was exceptionally fine, and I have seldom, in my travels to all parts of the world, seen anything so magnificent as the view I saw on this occasion, and of which I took a photograph.

A TREE HOUSE, YSABEL ISLAND.

This island was a fine field for the collection of lepidoptera and coleoptera. The natives, too, vied with each other as to who could bring the greatest number of specimens—beetles and insects of all kinds—but in almost every instance they spoiled what they caught by rough handling, and we were obliged to throw them away.

The women, better looking than the generality of females in these islands, were not at all shy, and were continually

Digitized by Google

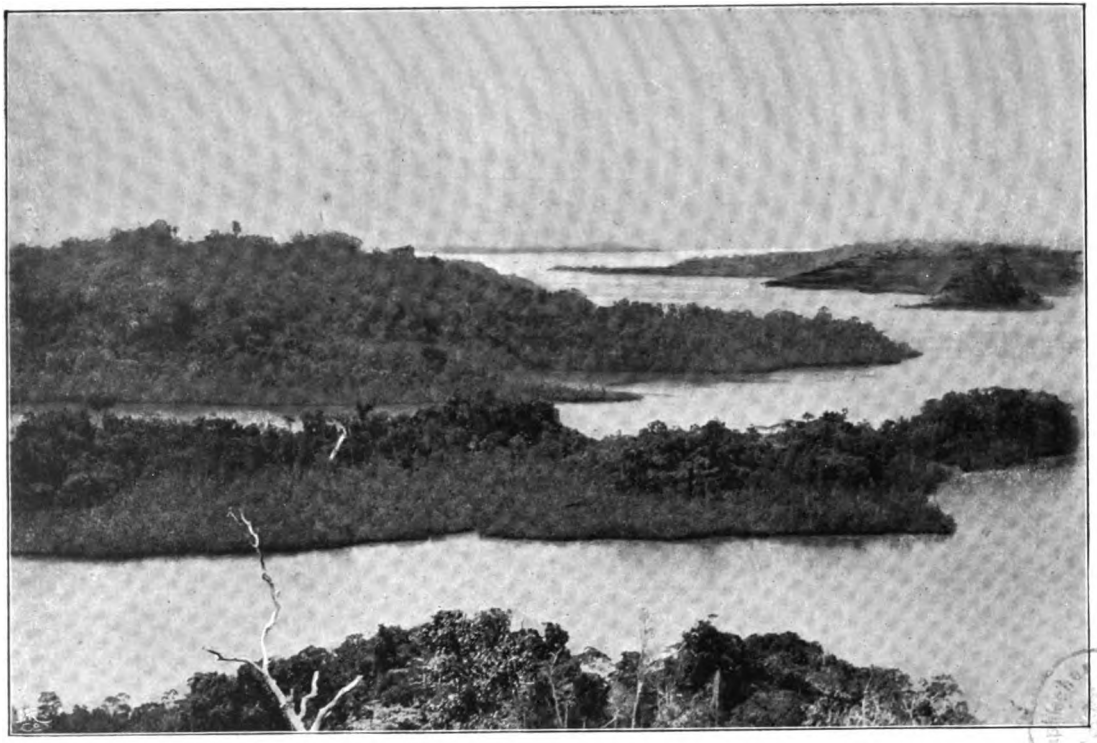


RABIANA LAGOON NATIVE WITH DISTENDED EARS

Adriatisches Amt-Bibliothek-k.u.k. Kriegs Marine

Digitized by Google

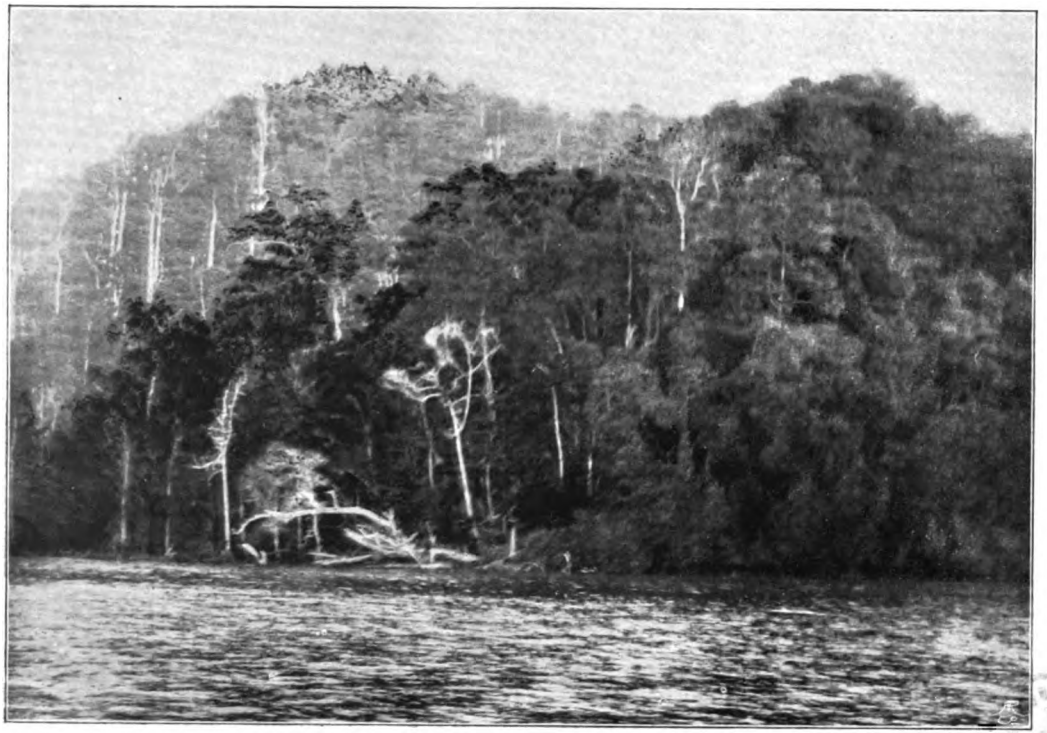
Digitized by Google



VIEW FROM THE HEIGHTS OF PO-PO, YSABEL ISLAND.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



PO-PO VILLAGE, YSABEL ISLAND.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

paddling out in their canoes from the shore to the schooner, lying about on the decks the whole of the day and sometimes a great part of the night.

Occasionally the natives in Ysabel, besides building their villages resembling forts, as in the case of the village of Po-po, build their houses on the tops of trees. Some of these houses are 80 to 100 feet from the ground, and are reached only by ladders made of bamboo and rattan. In the distance they appear like enormous birds' nests some twenty feet in circumference and surrounded by a small platform with a hole in the middle, through which any enemy ascending can be killed by having stones dropped upon him.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

DISCOVERY OF THE SOLOMON ISLANDS—NATIVE TYPES—MURDERS—MANY ENGLISHMEN KILLED.

THE Solomon Isles, of which we at home knew comparatively little or nothing until a few years ago, were discovered by the Spanish explorer Mendana in 1567, and extend for a distance of over 600 miles, N.W. and S.E. The natives were very friendly to him, but were disgusted when he at once threw overboard the present which the chief sent him, consisting of a quarter of a boy with one hand and arm attached.

The rainfall is considerable, but the climate infinitely superior to that of New Guinea. From the time when Mendana first discovered these islands for upwards of two hundred years we do not hear of their having been visited, until in 1767 a vessel was fitted out and sent on a voyage of discovery to the South Pacific. This ship, *The Swallow*, commanded by Captain Carteret, sighted them. Subsequently many officers, among them being Lieutenant Shortland, Mons. Bougainville, Admirals D'Entre, Castreaux, and D'Urville also visited the group. The islands are volcanic, and on many of them there are to be seen mountains ranging from five to ten thousand feet in height. On the island of Bougainville and some few others in the group, the volcanoes are still active, occasionally belching forth tongues of flame to the terror of the natives. Earthquakes are of very frequent occurrence, and during

Digitized by Google

my visit to the group I experienced many uncomfortable shakings on account of them. The shores of most of the islands are fringed with mangroves, and most of the country is clothed with dense forest and prolific undergrowth. Nevertheless, on Bougainville, Choiseul, Ysabel, and Guardalcanar there is much excellent land, the last-named especially being very fertile. The inhabitants are Papuans, although the Melanesian type as well as the Polynesian can easily be distinguished in various parts of the group. I also noted many natives bearing unmistakable Hebraic features, and their aptitude for trade and the keenness with which they execute their various dealings would lead one almost to believe that they comprise one of the lost tribes of Israel. They are one and all cannibals, frightfully cruel and terribly treacherous. Head-hunting seems to be their only occupation, and the practice of offering up human sacrifice on even the most trival occasion prevails throughout the group.

It was not far from the island of Mandoliana that Lieut. Bowen of H.M.S. *Sandfly*, and also a number of his boat's crew, were killed in 1880 at the hands of a head-hunting party close to where I was staying. And when I was at Rubiana there was head money offered for the heads of certain natives who had displeased a certain chief. On many occasions the same reward has been offered for the heads of white men; I was therefore cautioned never to move without my revolver in hand. Head-hunting raids are constantly being organised upon villages near at hand, but never has it been known that any one expedition has been formed and sent out to any particular village without first being confident that they were attacking a very much weaker party than their own. On these occasions every available canoe is manned, some of the larger ones holding as many as sixty warriors, who, armed to the teeth, set out on their murderous journey. I have been an eye-

Digitized by Google

witness to more than one such expedition, when a large haul had been made and more than sixty trophies in the shape of heads had been captured, which were immediately smoke-dried and preserved by being plastered over with chinam. They were then taken to the temple or tambu house, when the chief made an oration mentioning by name every successful warrior who had added to the store. The whole village then commenced a wild and frantic dance, brandishing their weapons until they all fell to the ground in a state of absolute frenzy and exhaustion. On one occasion the excitement increased to such a degree that I grew rather apprehensive, and so slowly walking to the boat I regained it and returned home, not, however, without being the recipient of many scowling looks and yells from the excited roysterers.

Gratitude is, we know, rare enough even in the civilised world, but it is a *nomen incognitum* in the Solomon Islands. The captain of the schooner who eventually took us to Sydney told me that in one deliberately planned attempt to murder him and his crew the ringleader had been a man whom he had previously nursed back from sickness to health and for whose welfare he had done all that lay in his power.

The natives may be considered a finely proportioned race although slightly under the average height of man; they are considerably darker than the natives of New Britain. Each island has its own particular dialect, and the people are for ever at war with one another.

The fact that these islands lie out of the track of all steamers probably accounts for the neglected condition in which they have been allowed to remain. They are easily accessible nevertheless, being at the extreme east of New Guinea, and within the last few years a considerable trade has been opened up and a great deal more would be done were it not that the natives are such fierce head-hunters

Digitized by Google

MYSELF WITH MY NATIVE HUNTERS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

and cannibals, "cooked man" being their *pièce de résistance* as the *paté de foie gras* is to the civilised gourmet.

Their weapons are spears, bows, and arrows. The former, tipped with barbs of human bone cleverly inserted and of most formidable appearance, are generally about ten feet in length; they are occasionally poisoned, but such instances are rare. The arrows, which are made not unlike the spears in appearance, are beautifully carved, and many hours of laborious work are spent upon each. The majority of natives wear no clothing whatever, and even those who wear a narrow band of cloth use the scantiest possible quantity. A great many ornaments are worn both by men and women, pearl shell and pig teeth being mostly used; but they have a beautifully finished arm-ring made from the clam shell, and rubbed down on sandstone to an exquisite fineness. These latter are greatly prized, and it was with considerable difficulty that I obtained some perfect specimens.

I believe some years ago, when Englishmen first took to recruiting labour for the Queensland plantations in this group, several instances of great cruelty were practised towards the natives, and I am glad to say the offenders were severely punished, as in the case of the *Hopeful*, and many others too numerous to mention. And dearly have the English traders who have settled there within the last sixteen years suffered through it. The following is a list of a few of the men who had been murdered for apparently no reason whatever:—

Captain Fergusson, Captain Townsend, James Morrell, Thomas Dobell, Lieutenant Bower, R.N., an entire boat's crew of H.M.S. *Sandfly*, J. H. Cooper, Charles Ladden, William Dobell, W. Child, Captain Craig, Frederick Howard, Captain Havie, Messrs. Nelson, Adams, Quinn, Martin, Donald Guy, a Government agent and his boat's crew, F. Nyburg, Jeffrey, Elsden and four sailors, Armstrong, and scores of others.

Digitized by Google

Of the traders at present in the group I met nearly all, and found them a very generous-hearted, hard-working, and self-sacrificing body of men, but they all have one common grievance. It appears that the Solomon Islands under the British Protectorate are open for purposes of trading to all vessels of any nationality whatsoever while that portion of the group annexed by the German Empire is open only to Germans, or to foreigners on payment of an annual licence £12 10s. But, as in this case, the British subject, or whoever he may be, is not allowed to employ a native to work ashore, it is impossible to do any successful trade.

Max Müller has affirmed the justice of the idea that, in order to understand what the so-called civilised people may have been before they reached their higher enlightenment, we ought to study savage tribes such as we find them still at the present day; it is a lesson which has been taught us, applied to the stratification of the human race.

I found throughout the Solomon group, and also in New Guinea, very many distinctly different languages, but in the latter place the dialectal variety is very much greater.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

VOYAGE TO SHORTLAND—I BREED THE ORNITHOPTERA—NARROW ESCAPE FROM THE NATIVES—VOYAGE TO SYDNEY—HOME.

THE last few days remaining to us—for the schooner had arrived which was to take us to Sydney—I spent almost entirely in New Georgia collecting the fauna of that country, and many pleasant hours were spent roaming near the sea-shore, for after my former experience I did not deem it advisable to go very far inland.

On the 12th of August we sailed in the schooner *Lark* for Sydney, she being bound first for the Shortland Islands with provisions for the trader living there. On our arrival at Alu on the coast of Shortland, we found that there was much copra to be taken on board, which necessarily delayed our departure for a few days. I was not sorry, however, because it gave us an opportunity of adding something more to our already large collections, and the captain having kindly lent us his boat we made many excursions to the various islands in the neighbourhood. Among other things, we obtained very many specimens of the *Ornithoptera D'Urvilliana*, both in the butterfly state and in the pupæ—many of the latter I hatched in my cabin on the way to Sydney. It may be interesting to know that immediately after this ornithoptera is born it resembles very much the *Ornithoptera Priamus*, and only assumes its blue colour

Digitized by Google

an hour or two after coming to life. I also hatched one specimen of the *Ornithoptera Victoria*, which was born two days before our arrival in Australia.

The day before we left I took the boat and one or two natives with me to an island some few miles distant, in the hopes of obtaining particular species of lepidoptera which I knew to exist there. On arriving at the village, which was situated a few yards up from the beach and densely surrounded by cocoanut trees, I looked in vain for the inhabitants, who had not put in any appearance, as they usually do on the landing of a stranger. This augured of evil, as the native is in the habit of remaining inside his house on the arrival of any person he does not wish to see. I took very little notice of this as I had a gun and revolver with me, but left two boys with the boat with distinct instructions not to leave it under any circumstances.

Returning after an hour or two spent in the forest with the object of my visit safely stowed away, I found all the men of the village assembled together in the council house—at least a hundred in number—apparently much excited and gesticulating wildly. On perceiving me they all pointed at me, and at the same time cast by no means friendly glances in my direction. I sauntered directly up to the chief, and, slapping him on the back, offered him a cigar and at the same time intimated that I required some cocoanuts to drink, and after some hesitation and delay they were brought. Knowing quite well that they would not attack me from in front, I placed my back against a tree before quenching my thirst and appeared apparently quite unconcerned, although I was quite aware of the dangerous position in which I was. Again walking up to the chief, I shook him by the hand, and, turning away, slowly walked down to the beach without turning my face from the people, and I was by

Digitized by Google

no means sorry to find myself safe in the boat once more. I attributed my safety, and I can but little doubt that I owed my life, on this occasion, to the fact that I, apparently inadvertently, displayed a large revolver as well as the shot gun which I had slung over my shoulder.

On the 22nd of August we left for Sydney, where we did not arrive until the 18th of September, after a month of terrific weather, experiencing very frightful hurricanes, and on more than one occasion we were compelled to heave to. During such times I was obliged to keep to my bunk as, still very weak from the effects of the malaria contracted in New Guinea, I did not seem to possess enough strength to be clinging on outside.

Sydney harbour was at length entered, however, and after a stay of two or three days we caught the mail steamer and arrived in England on the 19th of November, 1894.

Our collections during this expedition, of which a partial list is given in the Appendix, comprised some 16,000 specimens of lepidoptera, and a great many ornithological specimens, and coleoptera, besides numerous snakes, mammals, and ethnological specimens, and not a few species of the different orders were, I am glad to say, new to the scientific world.

Digitized by Google

PART II.

CHAPTER I.

ARRIVAL IN JAVA — BATAVIA — THE VICTORY OF THE DUTCH AT WATERLOO — BEAUTIFUL BUITENZORG — THE BOTANICAL GARDENS — PALACE OF THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL — A TEA ESTATE — A ZOOLOGICAL COLLECTION — MY VISIT TO A HEALTH RESORT — A NATIVE THEATRE.

In the autumn of 1895 I started for my second and by far the more lengthy expedition. Travelling overland by Paris to Marseilles, I there took a Messagerie Maritime steamer, and a month or so later I arrived at Singapore, where I only remained one night, and, transhipping into one of the company's smaller steamers, I reached Batavia on the 1st of November. Here I was obliged to remain for some short time as I was desirous of engaging some Malays to take with me to the farther East. There has been so much written already of Java and its dependencies that it is not my intention to dwell much on that country, but merely to give a description of the places and plantations I personally visited, and of the social life of the Dutch in Netherlands India.

On arriving at Tanjong Priok, the harbour from which Batavia is reached, I found I was obliged to leave all my rifles and ammunition in the customs, and that I should

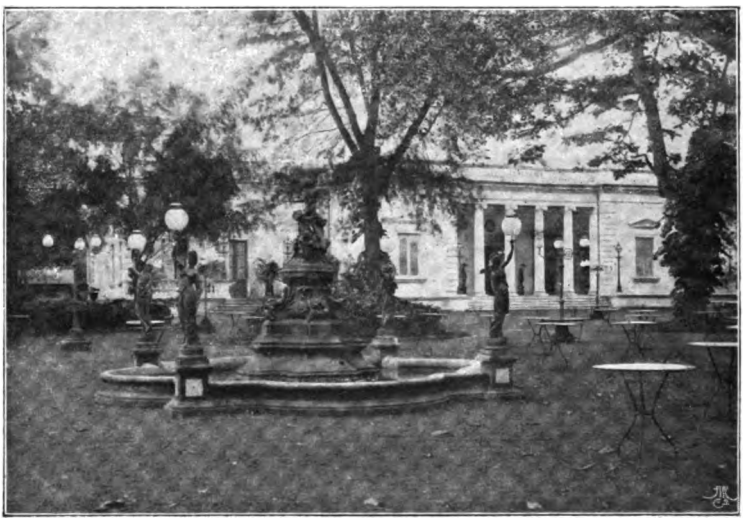
Digitized by Google

only be permitted to take them into the country on obtaining a special permission from the Governor-General. This the British Consul very kindly arranged for me, at the same time obtaining a special permit to travel in Netherlands India for a period of one year. The small railway running to the harbour from the town passes through a very pretty bit of tropical scenery and, for the greater part of the distance, some five or six miles, side by side with one of those canals for which the Dutch are so noted. The town of Batavia itself has long since ceased to hold the residences of the European population, but is now set apart as the business portion. All the old mansions, with their massive staircases and wonderful carvings, are now turned into offices, or "go downs," as they are called by the merchants established there. A mile or two further on and one comes to the upper part of Batavia, called "Weltevreden," which is unquestionably the finest of all Indian towns. It is to this part—the veritable Hyde Park of Batavia—that the Europeans, one and all, return after the heat and labour of the day. And with one or two exceptions, such as the Passer Senin and the Passer Bahroe, where may be seen Malay and Chinese shops, the whole of this part of the town reminds one of some beautiful park with its picturesque villas dotted here and there and built in rows and approached by most pretentious carriage sweeps, and beneath the shade of truly superb tamarind trees with all their exquisite beauty of tropical foliage. It is on the verandahs and inside a great many of these very pretty villas, with their overhanging Bougainvillia and tropical creepers, that are exposed for sale all European wares, for be it known these are the shops of Weltevreden, and I must say that at night-time when they are all lit up—for electricity has even found its way to this city in the Far East—they remind one of so many fairy palaces

Digitized by Google

amongst the trees. But one can form no idea of the beauties of this wonderful city until a drive has been taken past the palace of the Governor-General to the barracks of the cavalry, along by the Waterloo Plain, and finishing by making a complete *détour* of the King's Plain, on the sides of which all the *crême de la crême* of Netherlands Indian society resides.

Of its buildings, the palace of the Governor-General, the

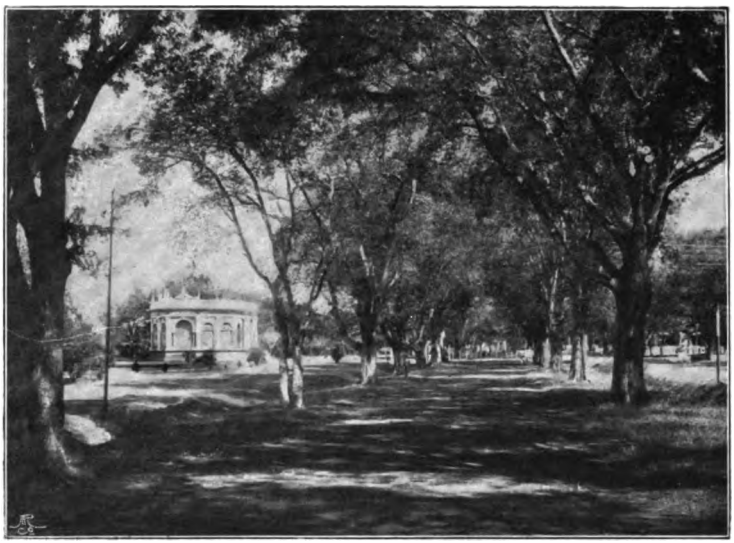


THE CONCORDIA MILITARY CLUB, BATAVIA.

museums, the opera house, and the Harmonic and Concordia Clubs form the principal. The Harmonic, which is the civilians' club, is situated on the banks of the canal and near the palace, and on certain evenings during the week one of the military bands discourses beautiful music in its grounds. On these occasions ladies are admitted to the club. The Concordia, which is the military club, was built by the English during their occupation of Java

Digitized by Google

at the commencement of the present century—a truly magnificent edifice with its stately halls, and floored throughout with Italian marble, it holds rank with the finest buildings in the country. It stands amidst very extensive grounds in the centre of which is erected a stand, and on Wednesdays and Saturdays, from 9 to 12, one of the finest bands I have ever heard out of Europe gives pleasure to the people.



KING'S PLAIN, BATAVIA.

The private residences of the more wealthy population, who, as I have already said, surround the King's Plain, are truly beautiful. They are approached from the road by way of an avenue some fifty yards in length, the whole compound being enclosed by a low stone wall. The houses themselves are generally built on stone pillars raised a few feet from the ground, for health's sake, and are entered by ascending some marble steps, the whole

Digitized by Google

house being surrounded by a very wide marble-floored verandah, and in the front of which may be seen invariably a large massive table, set round with innumerable rocking chairs—for the Dutch always sit round a table when talking to one another.

The small English population of course, being, as usual, more energetic than the people amongst whom they are living, have successfully established a very excellent tennis club and golf links, and during the time I was there the formation of a polo club was on the tapis.

In the centre of the Waterloo Plain and facing the whole line of Cavalry Barracks, not at all unlike those of the Royal Artillery at Woolwich, towers a massive monument, on the top of which is an absurdly small figure representing what I took to be a lion. Underneath is an inscription which states that this monument was "erected in memory of the battle of Waterloo, won by the Dutch, June 18, 1815." Brave Hollanders!!!

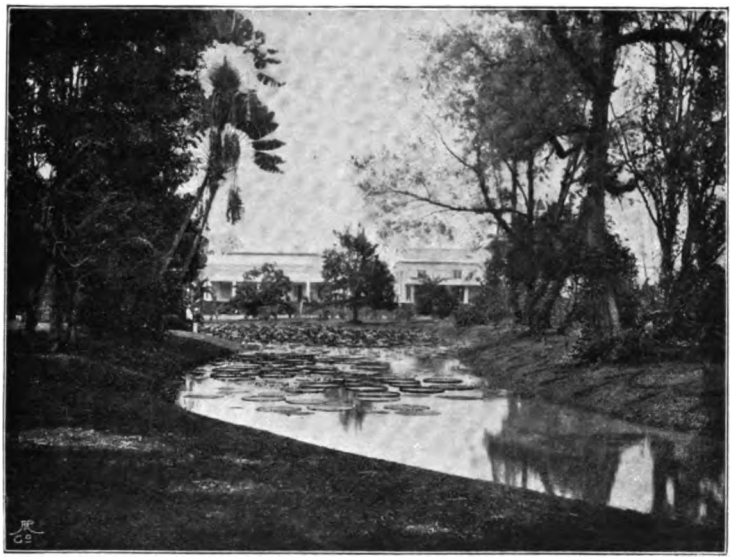
Running through the principal streets of the town is a very well-constructed canal, by the aid of which all the refuse of the town is carried to the sea; notwithstanding this native men, women, and children may be seen at all hours of the day and night either bathing, or washing their sarongs and their rice.

A very *negligé* costume is worn throughout the day by the Dutch ladies. It consists of a sarong and kabaja, the former a long strip of native-made material, with very quaint designs printed upon it in many various colours. The size of this garment is that of a large bath towel, and it is deftly wound round the waist so as to conceal the two ends, which overlap. Reaching down as far as their ankles, it permits of the upper part of the foot being exposed to view; their toes are invariably encased in the smallest of velvet slippers embroidered with gold thread. The kabaja resembles very much our idea of

Digitized by Google

a lady's dressing jacket, except that it has no fastening at all in the front, but is just held together by a small brooch or safety-pin. This costume is changed in the evening for one more conventional.

After a week or two spent here I took train to Buitenzorg, which is considered the health resort of Java. It is situated 862 feet above the sea, and enjoys a



GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S PALACE, BUITENZORG.

distinctly different climate to the much damper heat of Batavia. Here the Governor-General makes his home.

The palace, which is built on a rise in the centre of a magnificent park, is a most imposing building, and from the gates looking up the beautiful avenue of tamarind and canary trees, and with the many hundreds of deer that one sees grazing in all directions, one would scarcely believe this to be anywhere out of Europe. Here,

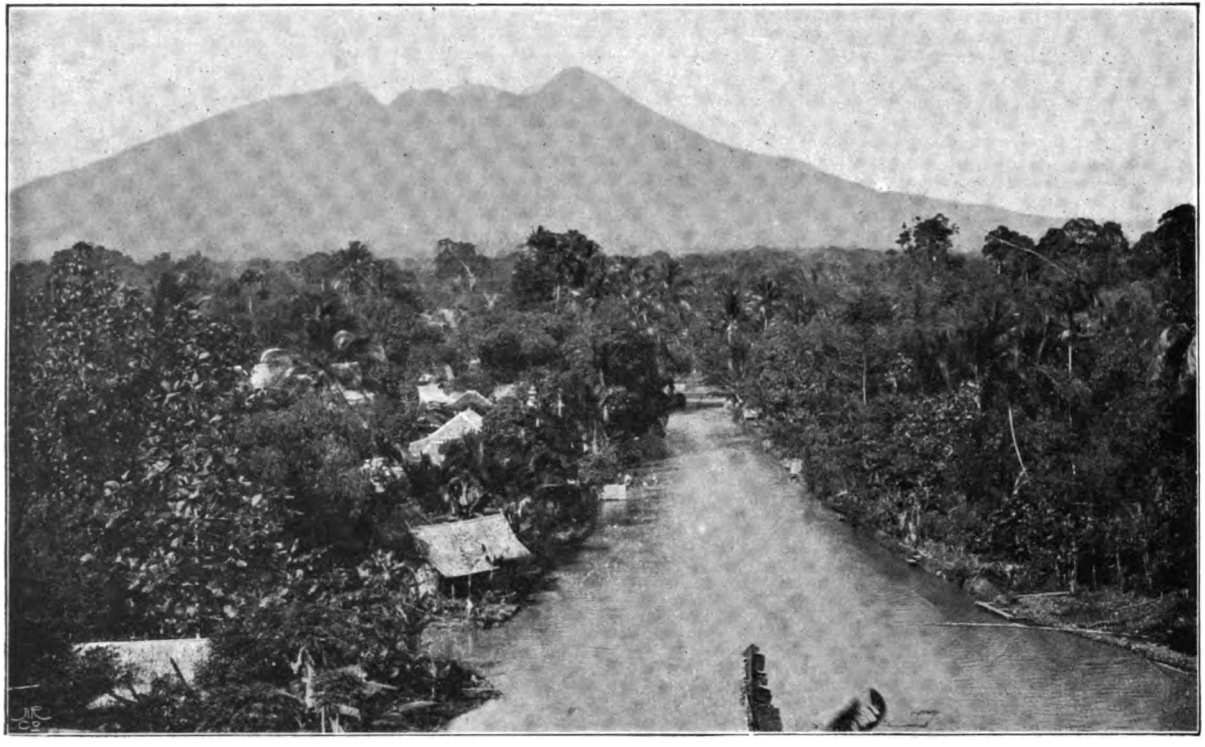
Digitized by Google

also, are the celebrated Botanical Gardens, which were established in 1817 by Reinwardt, and have long since become well known all over Europe. They contain a collection of palms second to none in the world, besides thousands of other rarities which are not to be seen elsewhere. Connected with these gardens is a huge laboratory, intended for botanists visiting Java. Scientific men have come from all parts of the world to see and study here.

From the hotel at which I stayed there is, I consider, one of the grandest views the world contains. At one's feet is the valley of Tjiliong, down the centre of which is rushing a mountain torrent where the natives are daily bathing, and on either bank can be seen their little picturesque villages, peeping out from beneath the stately cocoanut palms, and in the distance the wood-covered slopes of the Salak mountain gradually ascending to a height mostly hidden by the clouds, but in the early morning from the summit of whose peak can be seen the wreaths of smoke of an active volcano. Whilst here I received an invitation from a Dutch gentleman, on whose tea plantation I had spent a most enjoyable fortnight some few years ago when on a visit to Java, big game shooting, and I quickly availed myself of his kind hospitality. Mr. Kirkhoven, who is partly Scotch by descent, is one of the most charming Dutchmen it were possible to meet. His beautiful plantation, Sinagar by name, is well known now in Europe for the excellence of its tea. The estate, which is entirely lit by electricity, is some few miles from Buitenzorg, and is reached either by carriage or by train.

The house itself is a massive edifice of stone, of very large proportions, and built throughout for comfort. On the back verandah may be seen a telephone, by which communication can not only be made over the entire

Digitized by Google



THE VOLCANO, BUITENZORG.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

estate, to the residences of the different managers and overseers, but also over the whole of Java if the operator so wishes.

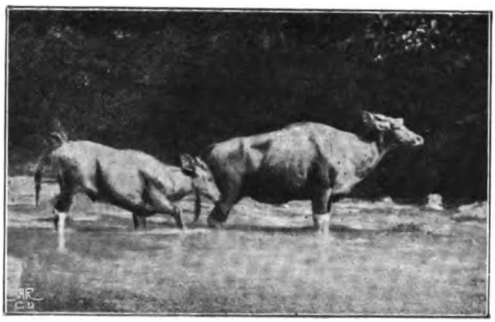
Mr. Kirkhoven owns a very valuable stud of thoroughbred horses, and is also the president of the Racing Club in Java, and the winner of innumerable racing cups. His partner, Baron von Heckeren, who also resides at Sinagar, was pleased to show me the many hunting trophies he had gained, for he and Mr. Kirkhoven are without doubt the greatest "shikarras" in Netherlands India, passing some months in the autumn of each year on a big game expedition. It was here that a year or two ago his Royal Highness the Archduke of Austria came and was shown so much sport by these two well-known hunters. Unfortunately my visit was spent at the wrong time of year for such an expedition, but I hope one day to be able to accept my friend's kind hospitality again, and shoot some tiger. Sinagar owns quite a large zoological collection, and at five o'clock each afternoon every living beast and creature on the estate is brought to the front of the house to receive a caress, a kindly word, and a handful of paddy (rice). A huge Sumatran elephant, showing magnificent ivory, is always first and foremost, the horses, the cattle, and sambwa deer, pigeons in all varieties from the beautifully crested Victoria pigeon from New Guinea, to the common fan-tail of Europe, all crowding round their master for their share; and last, but by no means least, a perfect specimen of the Banting (wild bull) of Java, now perfectly tame through the energy and persevering patience of his worthy owner.

After a few days spent here, and finding that my time was getting short, I was obliged, with many regrets, to bid farewell to the keenest sportsman and the most genial host it has ever been my good fortune to meet in the East.

Digitized by Google

From here I took train to Soekaboemi, a name which signifies the "desire of the world," another of Java's health resorts. I was advised that I should probably be able to engage the men required here. With an average temperature of 75° Fahrenheit, and with only a moderate rainfall, Soekaboemi may be said to possess a most lovely climate. Standing on a hill above the town is a convalescent establishment, where one can lodge upon very reasonable terms.

Whilst here I witnessed the performance of the



A BANTING WILD COW AND CALF OF JAVA CROSSING A RIVER IN THE JUNGLE.

Wajang, a Javanese theatre in which the natives perform representations of ancient legends, wearing masks varying in colour and design according to the nature of person they represent. For instance, should the actor be representing a god, they are painted blue, for a devil or evil spirit, red. For giants or distinguished people the colour used is white. Their plays last for some considerable time, and on some occasions I have witnessed part of a performance that has been going on for days. The actors themselves do not speak their parts, but listening to the person who is carefully concealed from

Digitized by Google

the audience, gesticulate according to the words which he gabbles off at some furious rate from an old book. The majority of the spectators, on the occasion of which I speak, consisted of persons of all classes, high and low caste Javanese, Malays, and Chinamen—some asleep, some engaged in earnest conversation, but not a single one paying any attention to the performance.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

NATIVES ARE UNWILLING TO ACCOMPANY ME—WE TAKE ON BOARD DYNAMITE—JAVA A TROPICAL GARDEN—THE BEAUTIFUL WOMEN OF BALI—RUINS OF HINDOO TEMPLES—LOMBOK—PALACE OF THE LATE SULTAN—THE LOMBOK WAR—DEFEAT OF THE DUTCH—THE SUTTEE: SELF-SACRIFICING WOMEN—MACASSAR—EXCITABLE NATIVES—STORY OF TWO MEN WITH ONE WIFE.

FROM here I paid a visit to another tea plantation high up in the mountains, some twenty miles distant. My luggage was carried by coolies for ten solid miles to the top, for the small sum of ten cents apiece, which equals twopence.* This plantation is owned by an Englishman, and is very prettily situated on the top of a range of mountains, many thousand feet above the level of the sea.

I soon afterwards learned that the steamer would start in a few days for Macassar, and so I was obliged to hurry back to Batavia without any success as regards engaging hunters, for it appears that on the very mention of the name New Guinea the Javanese and Malays fly, and whether it be on account of the cruelty many of them

* And as an instance of the many miles coolies are sent for little payment, I may mention that on one occasion during my stay here I received a letter bearing insufficient postage, and two days later received a notice from a post-master thirty-three miles distant, and sent by hand, the man being on foot, requesting the payment of five cents, being the amount due on the unpaid letter.

Digitized by Google

have received at the hands of certain planters there, the fear of small-pox, or whether it is because they have heard so many cannibal stories of the Papuans, I cannot say, but certain it was I quite failed to engage the services of any for my forthcoming expedition to that country.

The native population of Java consists principally of Javanese, Chinese, Malays, and Arabs, and I believe there are over twenty millions of inhabitants in the island. They all exhibit a healthy, strong, and well-fed appearance, for the most part excessively clean ; and their religion, which prohibits the use of alcohol, assists them to be free from many common diseases of more civilised nations. Naturally a lascivious race, the continual contact they have had with European people has propagated rather than diminished their love of vice.

Before leaving Java I wrote to England for a yacht to be purchased for me, as I found the steam service was so irregular to the countries I intended to visit, and to some there was no communication whatever. I therefore made arrangements for the purchase of a vessel in Australia which should meet me in the Kei Islands, in the course of a few months' time.

Bidding goodbye to Batavia, I took passage on one of the steamers of the Koninklijke Paketvaart Maatschappij bound for Macassar, and two days later anchored in the roads off Soerabaja, where we only remained a few hours to take in some cases of dynamite. The town of Soerabaja is the second largest town in Java, and is situated on the eastern end of the island. It possesses, if possible, a hotter climate than that of Batavia, and although a very large business centre, has very few places of interest in or around it. I cannot leave Java, however, without saying how very much struck I was with the beautiful scenery throughout the

Digitized by Google

whole of the country, and from its tiny railway winding over the numerous mountains and down into the depths of the many valleys, I saw the most lovely tropical scenery I had ever gazed upon. The prolific tropical undergrowth with its intense green, the paddy fields forming ridges up the slopes to the very summit of the highest mountains, the myriads of cocoanut palms, the picturesque villages, and the numerous rivers winding here and there in all directions, all combine to enhance the beauty of the scene, and to liken Java to one vast tropical garden.

The next day, after leaving Soerabaja, we arrived at Boeleleng, on the island of Bali, and as we had some few hours to wait before the departure of the steamer again, I went on shore for the purpose of visiting some Hindoo temple a few miles in the interior. Engaging a "sadoe" (pony carriage), after much difficulty, from a native, I drove to these temples, which date from the eighth century, and are built entirely after the Buddhistic style. In appearance they very much resemble, though on a much smaller scale, the famous temples of Boro Boedoer in Java. They contain innumerable Buddhist images sculptured in stone, with many tiers and terraces surrounding them, and although the temples are partially in ruins the frescos are in a wonderful state of preservation to-day. Spending a very pleasant hour in examining the many beautifully sculptured bas-reliefs, and the many designs of the Buddhist sculptor, I then returned to the port and took a stroll through the market. Bali is the only remaining Hindoo island in this group.

Of the natives, the women are exceptionally beautiful, with erect carriage and with flowing black sarongs; they present a striking contrast to the undersized Javanese.

Passing along the coast and beneath the very shadow of the beautiful peak of Bali towering up into the clouds,

Digitized by Google

we arrived the next morning at Ampenan, in Lombok, and some officers of a Dutch man-of-war accompanied me on shore. This place is the scene of the late war waged against the Dutch on account of their interference in the native tribal troubles. The town, which is now strongly fortified, is surrounded entirely by ramparts, consisting of logs and fallen trees piled one on another. Many cannons are to be seen in the streets and sentries of Dutch Indian troops are parading everywhere. The natives were originally Sassachs, but they were conquered by the Burgis and have almost entirely disappeared, but the few who do remain hold the present occupiers of the country in undying hatred, willing and ready at any moment to rise up and make a terrible onslaught on them. I paid a visit to the ruins of the palace of the late Sultan, and also to the small Hindoo temple where the Dutch troops took refuge from the natives during the massacre two years ago. The remains of the palace itself —for the Dutch during the engagement almost entirely razed it to the ground—must have been of huge dimensions, covering many acres of ground, and must have been one of the most remarkable palaces of the East, for the Sultan himself was one of the richest of all the Indian potentates. In the grounds is built a swimming bath some three-quarters of a mile in circumference, and in the centre, beneath a richly carved circular canopy, is a small resting lounge where the Sultan was in the habit of reclining to view the daily ablutions of the many hundred women which constituted his harem. This monarch was the instigator of the terrible attack made upon the Dutch in 1893–94, when a whole regiment of the latter, who were encamped on a small piece of open ground half a mile away from the palace, were suddenly surprised in the night and massacred to a man.

This man taxed his people terribly, and the many

Digitized by Google

subterfuges he resorted to to gather together the enormous riches of which he was the possessor, caused him to be much hated. It is reported that on his becoming acquainted with the order issued for his capture, after reinforcements from Java had successfully repulsed the natives in Lombok, he caused to be thrown no less than two million English sovereigns into one of his lakes, but whether this be true I cannot say. He was afterwards taken to Java, where he died soon after, the bonds of captivity resting heavily on him, and his son, finding that he had little or no power remaining, committed suicide.

On my walk back to the ship I passed a native who had fastened in his sarong what appeared to me to be a very handsomely carved kris (native dagger), and I asked him to let me examine it, and with much reluctance he did, when I at once discovered it to possess a massive gold handle, inlaid with diamonds and other stones. A big price was offered him for it, but he refused to sell. It is my firm belief that this formed part of the many thousand pounds' worth of valuables which were looted during the sacking of the palace.

I observed that the Dutch were here erecting very large barracks, intending this place to hold a large garrison, for they still entertain a certain amount of fear that the natives may again rise, and indeed if they were to do so in any sort of systematic way and with experienced generals to lead them, the Dutch would find it a very hard matter indeed to hold their own.

Whilst here I was told of an extraordinary custom practised among the women of self-immolation, and taking up some time afterwards an old copy of the *Indian Archipelago Journal* I read more fully a description of this horrible practice, and I now give here an extract upon that subject: "On the island of Lombok wives may suffer

Digitized by Google

themselves to be burned after the death of their husbands —they are not compelled to do it. They have the choice of allowing themselves to be burned or krised (disembowelled by the native dagger). The first is the most rare. The wives of the Rajahs, however, suffer themselves to be burned. Having been present at one of these horrible spectacles I will relate how it was conducted. The gusti, who died at Ampenan, left three wives. One of them would let herself be krised for his honour, and that against the will of all on both sides of her family. The woman was still young and beautiful; she had no children. They said to me that a woman under such circumstances who suffered herself to be killed had indeed loved her husband. She intended to accompany him on his long journey to the gods, and she hoped to be his favourite in the other world. The day after the death of the gusti his wife took many baths; she was clothed in the richest manner, she passed the day with her friends in eating, drinking, chewing of sirrih, and praying. About the middle of the space before the house they had erected two scaffoldings of bamboo, of the length of a man, and three feet above the ground. Under these they had dug a small pit, to receive the water and the blood that should flow. In a small house at one side, and opposite these frameworks, were two others entirely similar. At four o'clock in the afternoon men brought out the body of the gusti wrapped in linen, and placed it on the left of the two central platforms. A priest of Mataram removed the cloth from the body, while young persons hastened to screen it from the public gaze. They threw much water over the corpse, washed it, and covered the whole body with flowers. They then brought a white net. The priest took a cup filled with water, on which he strewed some flowers. He first sprinkled the deceased with this water, and then poured it through the

Digitized by Google

net on the body, which he blessed, praying, singing, and making various mystical and symbolical motions. He afterwards powdered it with flour of coloured rice and chopped flowers, and placed it on dry mats. Women brought out the wife of the gusti with her arms crossed, and she was clothed with a piece of white linen only. Her hair was crowned with flowers. She was quiet, and betrayed neither fear nor regret. She placed herself standing before the body of her husband, raised her arms on high, and made a prayer in silence. Women approached her and presented to her small bouquets of kembang, spatii, and other flowers. She took them one by one and placed them between the fingers of her hands raised above her head. On this the women took them away and dried them. On receiving and giving back each bouquet the wife of the gusti turned a little to the right, so that when she had received the whole she had turned quite round. She prayed anew in silence, went to the corpse of her husband, kissed it on the head, the breast, below the navel, the knees, the feet, and returned to her place. They took off her rings. She crossed her arms on her breast. Two women took her by the arms. Her brother (this time a brother by adoption) placed himself before her, and asked her with a soft voice if she was determined to die, and when she gave a sign of assent with her head, he asked her forgiveness for being obliged to kill her. At once he seized his kris and stabbed her on the left side of the breast, but not deeply, so that she remained standing. He then threw his kris down and ran off. A man of consideration approached her and buried his kris to the hilt in the breast of the unfortunate woman, who sank down at once without uttering a cry.

"The women placed her on a mat, and sought by rolling and pressure to cause the blood to flow as quickly as

Digitized by Google

possible. The victim being not yet dead she was stabbed again with a kris between the shoulders. They then laid her on the second platform near her husband. The same ceremony which had taken place for him now began for the wife. Both bodies were covered with resin and cosmetic stuffs, enveloped in white linen, and placed in the small sick-house on the platforms. There they remain until the time has come, when they are burned together. It is always a near relation who gives the first wound with the kris, but never father nor son. Sometimes dreadful spectacles occur; such was one at which Mr. K. was present. The woman had received eight kris stabs and was yet quite sensible. At last she screamed out, driven by the dreadful pain, 'Cruel wretches, are you not able to give me a stab that will kill me?' A gusti, who stood behind her, on this pierced her through and through with his kris. The native spectators whom I had around me saw in this slaughter which took place before our eyes nothing shocking. They laughed and talked as if it were an every-day occurrence. The man who had given the last three stabs wiped his kris, restored it to its place in as cold-blooded a manner as a butcher would have done after slaughtering an animal." And such a ceremony is a modification of the Hindoo suttee.

The next afternoon we set sail once more, and very soon afterwards the cone of that gigantic mountain on Lombok, and known as the Goenoeng Rindjani, and the highest peak in the whole archipelago, was lost to view. On the morning of the 6th of December we arrived at Macassar, and I at once took up my residence at the Macassar Hotel, kept by a half-caste Papuan woman, as the ship in which I came went no further, and, much to my dismay, I found that I should be obliged to wait here for about ten days before the arrival of another that would take me further east.

Digitized by Google

Macassar is the chief town of Celebes, and is the emporium of the whole of the Moluccas. Being a free port, it carries on a very extensive trade with China, Australia, and Singapore. The entrance to the harbour is singularly picturesque, and entirely different from anything I have as yet seen. For miles along the sea-beach, from beneath the waving palms, can be seen the houses of the natives built upon high poles, sometimes in the water. There are hundreds of praus (native ships) to be seen riding at anchor, with their strange, turned-up sterns. Many high, bamboo scaffoldings are everywhere rising out of the sea, and used by natives to watch the position of the many shoals of fish as they enter into the harbour; and the weird sound of the drum is continually heard, by which the native prau owners make known their arrival or departure. On shore the white houses of the Europeans enclosed by high, whitewashed stone walls, all help to make this a quaint, Eastern market—for as such the town of Macassar can be well described. The principal roads are overhung by lofty and beautiful trees, imparting to the town a very shady and cool appearance. On either side of these tamarind avenues are the residences of the European population. The first large building I came upon was the club, and here I may say, before going any further, that in every Dutch town I have visited one of the first and principal buildings is the club, on the verandahs of which are invariably to be seen the residents, either playing cards or billiards or chatting together. In all these clubs I have never failed to find all the leading English papers, which goes a long way to prove that even the Dutchman holds the English Press in great esteem. Farther on, and about the centre of the town, is the residence of the Governor, a fine white building, entered through two huge and massive gates bearing the arms of Holland upon them; the other

Digitized by Google

principal buildings being the hospital, the law courts, and the theatre.

The town of Macassar is exceptionally clean. Although it is under Dutch rule it is necessary to obtain permission from the Rajah of Goa before entering his territory, which lies within a mile of Macassar, and even whilst I was here two Swiss gentlemen, botanists and geographers, upon penetrating to the interior, were arrested and conducted back to the coast, as they were unable to show the necessary permit. Like every other Dutch colonial settlement I found here a very first class military band, which plays on certain evenings outside the club-house after dinner.

On more than one occasion I accepted the hospitality of her Majesty's ship *Wilhelmina*, and the officers, who all spoke English perfectly, did everthing that lay in their power to make my enforced delay here a pleasant one.

The natives, for the most part of Malay origin, are of a much more excitable temperament than the inhabitants of Java—ever ready to engage in a quarrel. They are a loud-speaking, deceitful race. The women, who differ also very much from the Javanese, wear the sarong hanging in wide folds around them, whilst another sarong is placed round their head and shoulders and is held up by their left hand.

One morning two native young men, of about the age of twenty-five, and brothers, called upon me, hearing that I was desirous of engaging some hunters for my expedition to New Guinea and other islands. They told me that either was willing to go, and I could choose which one I liked best, but they would not both be able to do so. Being willing to engage both, I asked them their reason for only one wishing to accompany me. They then said they were very sorry, but as they only had one wife between them, one, it did not at all matter

Digitized by Google

which, would have to stay behind to look after her. After a good deal of conversation I deemed it advisable not to engage either, fearing that after we had gone the pangs of jealousy might enter into the soul of the one I had with me, when he might desert me to return to the matrimonial and fraternal couch.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

I ARRIVE AT AMBOYNA—COSTUMES OF THE NATIVES—GREAT DESTRUCTION BY EARTHQUAKE — THE RESIDENCY — I ENGAGE SOME HUNTERS — NATIVE FONDNESS FOR LAW — BANDA — THE GARDEN OF MOLUCCAS — NUTMEG PLANTATIONS — AN ANCIENT PORTUGUESE FORT — ARRIVAL IN NEW GUINEA — MURDER OF A MISSIONARY — I DEPART FOR THE KEI ISLANDS.

On the 15th of December I left by one of the Royal Steam Packet Company's steamers for Amboyna, and two days later entered the beautiful Bay of Ambon. Here again I was doomed to disappointment, for I discovered there to be no connection to the Kei Islands until the 28th inst. There was nothing for it, therefore, but to wait as patiently as possible, which under the circumstances I could hardly attempt with very good grace.

The town of Amboyna, which is very prettily situated between two high, precipitous tongues of land, with its white-painted houses and the long stone walls of the fort which face the sea, presented a most pleasing picture from the landing pier, on which were crowded a great many gaily dressed natives, to welcome the arrival of the ship and to while away the time. The roads, which are continually being swept, cause a complete absence of dust, and the prolific colourings from the various crotons and shrubs

Digitized by Google

which are to be seen everywhere, make it altogether a model settlement.

The natives, who are for the most part Christians, do not wear the head covering of the Malay. They have a strong mixture of Portuguese and Dutch blood in their veins, and as their food consists entirely of fish and sago, and is very easily obtained, the Ambonese are naturally very lazily inclined. The women, as is generally the case when tinctured with the blood of Europeans, are much

AMBOYNA.

finer featured than the women of Java, and all don the sombre colour of black. Every article is carried on their heads, and it is amusing sometimes to see a woman with only a glass bottle perched up in this position.

On Sunday I was profoundly interested in looking at the people on their way to church. The native costumes had been thrown aside for those more approaching civilisation—the men with black felt hats, long frock-coats and trousers, in some instances boots, but in every case white cotton gloves; the

Digitized by Google

women with a long, wide dress of some black, shiny material, white stockings, carrying a long, lace pocket-handkerchief over the left arm, and with sharp-pointed shoes turned up at the toes, after the style of the sixteenth century, and one and all appearing most uncomfortable, and longing for the morrow, when everything is put away until the next Sabbath, and they can go about half nude and barefooted again.

The Ambonese are a very light-hearted and excitable race. By no means total abstainers, they are excessively fond of arrack and gin, making also a third fermented beverage from the juice of the sugar palm, which they have named "sageroe." They speak a mixture of Malay and Portuguese, many of their words being of the latter language. This is excessively strange, inasmuch as it is more than 250 years since the Portuguese left the island, and there is not a single native living to-day who has any idea that his language is partially composed of a European one.

The houses, which are mostly built of stone, resemble the old style of early Dutch architecture, with their balconies facing the street. One misses very much the pretty little gardens always seen in front of the houses in Java. A second house is always built near at hand for the residents to take refuge in in case of earthquakes, so common here; and indeed, since my visit, they have been visited with one of these subterranean explosions, almost entirely demolishing the town and carrying away the fort altogether.

The Residency, some half mile behind the town, stands under the shadow of the precipitous volcano, and is surrounded by a very extensive, park-like garden. One morning, soon after my arrival, the Governor himself paid me a visit, and excused himself not offering to me the hospitality of his house on the ground that his daughter

Digitized by Google

was very sick. There I engaged two native hunters and bird skinners; one of them was formerly with the late Baron Mackay, and the other assured me he was with Wallace nearly forty years ago. This assertion, I informed him, I begged leave to doubt, as he certainly was not more than forty years of age himself.

On Christmas Eve I attended Divine service in the Church, and was the only European present. Nevertheless I could not make this statement in the presence of a great many of the congregation, I fear, without giving mortal offence. The place was full to overflowing, and principally consisted of native women, all dressed in their funereal costumes, only relieved by the white pocket-handkerchiefs hanging down to the knee on the one side. The clergyman was preaching most vociferously, notwithstanding every man, woman, and child in the building was talking to somebody else, and paying not the slightest attention to the words emanating from the pulpit. I overheard one conversation in Malay by two women sitting near me about the state of the local native fruit market, and as I could see most others engaged in the same manner it went to show that the entire congregation had come together to talk of their businesses and gossips, rather than to listen to the Word of God. These people are Christians!

I was struck by the great number of natives in Amboyna with hare-lips, and although I have asked on many occasions the reason, have never been able to ascertain the cause.

These people have a great mania for appearing in the public law-courts, and they are continually bringing actions against one another for imaginary grievances, so in this way they become notorious. There is also here a very fine brass band, which plays on certain evenings on the green in front of the fort.

Digitized by Google

I was not at all sorry when I was told by the manager of the shipping company that the steamer *Camphuys* would arrive on the following day and would leave again after a few hours for Kei, and on the 28th instant I turned my back upon Amboyna without, I think, one single regret; for whether it was the close contact with the European, or for any other cause, the Ambonese is a shallow, thieving, and untruthful member of humanity; and my

MAIN STREET OF AMBOYNA.

previous impressions were not altered when the two men I had engaged failed to put in an appearance when the ship started, and I was told by others that they never had any intention of leaving their native town, but only desired to get a month's wages, which they anticipated I would give them in advance.

The next day I arrived at the Banda Islands, which may be fairly described in all respects as being the most

Digitized by Google

picturesque in the Moluccas. Of the three the one on which the town is built, named Banda Neura, is the principal; a large volcanic island close by, Gunong Api (fire mountain), and the larger island of Banda a little to the southward. These three islands form a circle, and having only a narrow passage at either end, the space enclosed constitutes the charming harbour of Banda, and is entirely landlocked.

The most striking feature of the panorama is the volcano—generally in activity and conical in shape—at the foot of which many houses are owned by native fishermen, who are always on the look out for the shoals of fish so continually entering the harbour. The water is so clear that it can be seen through to a great depth and appears to be bluer and clearer than elsewhere. Standing high up against the town, in bold relief against the sky, rises a mediæval castle with battlements and pinnacles, and were it not for the presence of the many natives who surround the ship at anchor and the extraordinarily constructed canoes in which they paddle themselves about, one could almost fancy oneself transported to the shores of Southern Italy, so rich in tone and verdure is everything around.

The captain escorted me on shore and introduced me to a Dutch-Indian gentleman, who at once offered to show me over the island. He took me through his nutmeg plantation, the name of which was Herstella. The luxuriant growth of the nutmeg trees, unobstructed by underwood, proved a most delicious and cool retreat, and the little streams trickling down from the higher land in all directions to the harbour added very materially to the beauty of the scene.

The number of tropical birds I saw here, and the many varieties of butterflies, made me long for a time when I should be able to revisit this delightful group, but as the

Digitized by Google

steamer was already whistling to make me aware that the hour for departure had arrived, I was obliged to be satisfied with the few specimens I obtained, all of which proved to be rare, more especially a merle, occurring only here. During the hour I was on shore, however, I managed to climb to the top of a hill on the island, where there was a telegraph station overlooking the town and harbour and from whence I obtained a magnificent view of the surrounding scenery. The whole of these islands is given up to the cultivation of nutmegs. This tree, which is always in bloom, possesses a magnificent dark-green foliage, through which is observed the fruit in all stages of ripeness, from the small, round, green nut to the large and ripe fruit, yellow in appearance, the dark red mace appearing through it as it splits open. Every now and then one meets a native with a basket slung over his shoulder, carrying a long bamboo pole, with an arrangement at the end resembling a pruning hook, by which to procure the fruit far above him. Shading these well-cared-for orchards, the lofty canary tree spreads its branches, and thereby forms a protecting shelter against the noonday sun so harmful to the young fruit. High up in the branches of these trees is heard continually the deep and booming note of the *Carpophaga concenna*, a large pigeon which is met with all over the South Pacific. These birds swallow the fruit, discharging the nut in an undigested state, thereby assisting in the growth of new trees. These islands being volcanic, the ground and roads are nearly all crystalline basalt, while on the shore are scattered huge blocks of coraline limestone.

We left the same evening, and many thoughts passed through my mind as to whether I should ever be fortunate enough to view the spot again. The last thing which struck me on leaving the harbour was the old, deserted fort standing on the hill, and by its massive appearance I was

Digitized by Google

reminded how seriously the old East India Company must have regarded the welfare of this group. There is no doubt that their present owners must have fought very dearly for them, for the story of the colonisation of Banda is one long series of frightful atrocities.

The next morning we stopped at the small island of Gisser, situated on the coast of Ceram. In the midst of a group of other small islands, and rising but a few feet out of the water, it can be termed hardly anything but a sand-bank. I went ashore and walked round it, followed by a motley crowd of men, women, and children, all lost in wonder at the white man who would brave the heat of a glaring and scorching sun at midday simply for the pleasure of a stroll. Although there was but a small amount of cargo to be discharged, the natives proved themselves to be very independent, and refused to do a hand-stroke until their exorbitant demands had been acceded to.

On the 31st of December I arrived at Sekar, a village on the coast of New Guinea, but did not go ashore as the vessel only waited while a few letters were delivered to the one or two Arab traders living there. In the afternoon we arrived at Skroe, another village further down the coast, where we were obliged to anchor for the night. We received a visit from a Catholic missionary, who came on board to see the faces of white men again, and to hear some views of the outside world. I had a long conversation with him, and he told me of the many difficulties he experienced in his endeavours to teach the Gospel. I am sorry to say his arduous labours, however, proved of no avail, for within a month of my becoming acquainted with him the poor man was murdered by the very people for whose spiritual welfare he had sacrificed his life.

At six o'clock on the morning of January 1, 1896, the vessel proceeded to Kapauer, a mission station situated on the coast a few miles further on—notwithstanding the

Digitized by Google

rain, which was coming down in torrents, I went ashore, as I was desirous of learning whether this would be a good spot for me to return to, to make natural history collections. The mission house stands at the mouth of the river from which it takes its name, and is a large one, occupying a place on the beach surrounded by the dense and virgin forest. It was here that I first placed my foot on the soil of Dutch New Guinea, and the thought passed through my mind as to whether one day I should be unfortunate enough to leave my bones in that country. The natives seemed quite to hold the position, for men, women, and children roamed indiscriminately all over the house, and the missionaries, who were two in number, were apparently at their beck and call.

There were some twenty or thirty little children squatting on the verandah holding slates and waiting to receive their daily lesson; but as their schoolmaster, a native of Amboyna, named Christian, had begged me to let him have my gun immediately I had put my foot on the beach, and had gone off into the forest to shoot birds for me, they did not proceed any farther with their education at least for that day. It quite passes my comprehension what possible good can ever result from these good men establishing themselves here. In the first place, neither of them could speak a word of the language; and secondly, had they been able to do so, they were afraid to go one mile away from the shore on account of the treacherous nature of the natives. They even requested me to remain in sight of the house, as the natives, although apparently friendly, might at any moment become hostile—and I must say a more ferocious looking lot of cut-throats it would be hard to find. I returned on board at twelve o'clock, and we at once proceeded to Tocal in the Kei Islands.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

ARRIVE AT TOEAL, KEI ISLANDS—I OCCUPY THE PRISON—INTERVIEW THE RESIDENT—LAZY NATIVES—I BREED QUANTITIES OF THE ORNITHOPTERA PEGASUS—AN ABUNDANCE OF FISH.

DURING that afternoon we met with a very nasty squall, during which an enormous bottle of Kjaputi oil, which was standing in the corner of my cabin, became upset, the whole contents of which spread over the floor, thereby causing a powerful odour throughout the ship. This oil, which comes from the island of Bour, resembles somewhat the eucalyptus oil of Australia. It is manufactured by the natives, is of a greenish hue, and has an excellent virtue in cases of rheumatism, &c.

We arrived at Toeal, the chief town of the Kei Islands, on the 2nd of January, and I immediately went on shore and paid a visit to the Controlleur (Government Resident), who lived in a prettily situated house some hundred feet above the town. I found him extremely kind, and he begged me to come and reside with him and his wife during the few months I intended to remain in the islands, which offer I felt it best to refuse, preferring if possible to rent a house where I could with greater ease and convenience make a good collection of natural history specimens. He informed me that the only empty house, in fact the only building fit for occupation at all, was the disused prison, and he offered it to me at the rent of twelve guelders (£1)

Digitized by Google

a month. I at once established myself in it, and found the house in every way a suitable abode, and even while I was superintending the removal of my luggage from the steamer, coolies were sent to carry down a bed and every necessary article of furniture that I should require from the Residency itself, the controlleur's wife sending many little articles which she considered would add to my comfort.

In the front was a capital verandah floored with Portland cement, and a large, open living-room in the centre of the building, in which was a billiard table, provided for the recreation and amusement of the three Europeans on the island. On either side were two very large rooms, and at the back were several cells, which served my purpose as store rooms, dark room for photography, and sleeping rooms for my servants. The whole house being floored with the same material as the verandah, it was, therefore, very easily kept clean, and always cool.

I now began to cast about me for hunters to send into the forest, and notwithstanding the many difficulties I met with from the natives on account of their extreme laziness, I secured the services of six men, and my collections in lepidoptera therefore proceeded fairly well, although the only man I could find who could be induced to shoot for me could not be persuaded to go any distance into the interior on account of his indolence, so as far as my ornithological collection went I hardly got anything but what I shot myself; and as there was not a single man who could be taught to skin, that part of the work was done here, as everywhere, on the whole of my expedition by my own hands. I obtained many varieties and innumerable species of butterflies and beetles little or entirely unknown to European collectors.

Of the papilios I captured, I took a long series of the

Digitized by Google

Codrus, which is quite unlike its fellow of New Guinea, Ceram, or Celebes; also some albino species of the *Papilio Ormanus*, which, although known, is very rarely seen in European cabinets. Of the *Ornithoptera Pegasus*, so closely allied to the Priamus, that lovely and stately butterfly, with such an expanse of wing exhibiting so much green and gold about it; and so much sought after in Europe, I captured and bred as many as 150 specimens.* The hunter I sent into the bush to shoot could not be taught to distinguish the common green Lorry from one of a rarer species, and consequently I had so many of the commoner ones brought me that I very soon dispensed with his services altogether.

The *Carpophaga Concenna*, which I have already mentioned in a previous chapter, the magnificent pigeon described by Wallace, I found here, and shot about twenty specimens. It measures from twenty to twenty-five inches long, with grey head, neck, and breast; its back and wings are of metallic bronze colour, and its legs and feet coral red. I have found as many as twelve enormous canary nuts, which are each the size of a walnut, in its crop at one time. Of other pigeons I took about thirty species, some of which were very lovely, their plumage being of a most gorgeous description. Unfortunately, however, I arrived at a time when birds were in the moult.

The Kei Islands consist of a number of coral islands, only a short distance from one another, the two principal

* This butterfly was numerous here, and small native urchins from the Campong brought me quantities daily, receiving some small payment in exchange, but on account of the rough handling a great many proved to be worthless. On one occasion some were brought to me for which I offered a ruinous price, but as I had appeared perhaps a little too eager to possess them my offer was indignantly refused, when they were at once taken to the house of the German trader living here, and were sold to him for less than half my offer.

Digitized by Google

THE ORNITHOPTERA BREEDING.

(The photograph here produced is one I was luckily able to take in all the different stages—from the egg to the butterfly.)

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

being Great Kei and Little Kei, on the smaller of which is the town of Toeal, and the seat of the Dutch Government. The natives of Little Kei are a very mixed race, some being Papuans, but the majority consist of Malays, Arabs, and Chinamen, and in the market place it is a common occurrence to see a rajah, attired in some gaudy garments, hobnobbing with a man in flowing robes whom one easily detects to be a hadji. Then the Chinaman in his spotless white linen, smoking his opium and discussing the price of bêche le mer or rice with a half-cast Portuguese.

The market itself in the morning presents a very busy appearance, and is overabounding in fish, bananas, and other tropical fruits. The entire population almost solely exists on fish, and for a few cents one can buy enough of that commodity to keep a family for some days.

The harbour always presents here a busy sight, with the countless praus, either loading with bêche le mer, timber, &c., or discharging their cargoes of cloths, provisions, and European goods, which they have lately brought from Macassar, Batavia, or even Singapore. These praus, which are for the most part built at Har, a place on the larger island of Kei, are very well worthy of mention, inasmuch as they are built wholly and entirely from stem to stern without the aid of a single nail. They are made from the excellent timber found in the forests of Great Kei, and by felling many trees the natives secure sufficient for the purpose. The adze is then brought into requisition, and very adroitly they split the trees into planks of the proper dimensions, and with the same tool plane off the edge so that each fits flush with its neighbour. After the middle piece has been properly shaped and curved, these planks are built up on either side, joined together by strong wooden pegs

Digitized by Google

driven into holes bored for the purpose, and so closely do they fit that had they been turned out of a shipbuilder's yard they could hardly be more serviceably made. When the boat has been built up to the requisite height, the cross-beams are fixed by means of notches cut in either end and lashed with rattan. Thus is completed a prau fit almost to travel in any sea, as is often necessary; and, indeed, experience has shown me that the South Pacific glassy seas, pictured so glowingly by many writers, are of a very angry disposition at times.

Taking advantage of the Controlleur's kind offer to lend me his steam launch for a week, I paid a visit to one of the smaller islands of the group, where there was a beautiful waterfall and a most likely place for butterflies. On my arriving at Oot Island on the way, some few miles from Toeal, I found the sea was too rough to permit continuing on that day, so I was obliged to anchor there for the night. Going on shore I found the natives to be very busily employed making axes and knives, using a native forge for their manufacture. This forge, of which I give a small sketch I took on the spot, consists of two large cylinders of bamboo about three feet in height, having a small hole bored in each at the base, and into each is inserted a thin bamboo about two feet long, and meeting one another at a point where is placed a small heap of charcoal, constituting the fire of the forge. Seated on a small frame-like chair above the bellows was a Papuan slave, holding in either hand a staff, at the end of which were fastened huge bunches of feathers, each resembling a mop. These were inserted one in each cylinder, and by pumping vigorously caused a very considerable draught, and thus the native smith was enabled to heat the iron and manufacture his implements, which he did in a very creditable manner.

The whole of this small island was planted with cocoa-

Digitized by Google

nut trees, each bearing the different marks of their owners, and it is astonishing that although some may belong to a man who perhaps lives many miles away, and in another country, and who only comes once or twice a year to collect the nuts, there is not a being who lives on the island who could be persuaded to steal one.

It rained very heavily that night, and the small craft, which was only about thirty-two feet long, was in consequence very uncomfortable, and I was therefore drenched to the skin.

A NATIVE FORGE, KEI ISLANDS.

On the following morning, the sea having gone down, we went on to the waterfalls, where we arrived in the afternoon, and made preparations for my stay of a week. Shortly after we had anchored there was great excitement among the natives on the arrival of a large canoe with an enormous dugong on board. This creature, which the natives had speared, resembled somewhat a hippopotamus and a cow, and I should think weighed fully half a ton. It was a most hideous brute to look at, but I am told the flesh is very good to eat. I had myself, on a previous

Digitized by Google

occasion, shot at them from my boat, but without success.

The canoes of the natives here were quite different from the more Europeanised craft made at Toeal. From forty to fifty feet long, they rise up in the bows to some twelve feet and at the stern to fully eighteen feet, and are decorated with rows of cowrie shells and huge bunches of cassowary hair and feathers of brightly plumaged birds. These canoes are capable of holding fifty or sixty men, and travel at an enormous speed, the natives on board shouting and singing while dashing their paddles far into the water, they cast up clouds of spray as they go along.

After about a week spent here, and collecting many interesting species of lepidoptera, I returned to Toeal, greatly to the disappointment of these simple islanders, to whom I had been very lavish in my presents of arrack and tobacco. Reaching Toeal, without anything worthy of notice, on the following evening, I at once made preparations for my visit to Great Kei, the largest island of this group and the only one which is at all mountainous. The Controlleur again offered me the use of his steam launch, but the weather being unpropitious I considered it more advisable to charter a prau owned by a native of Macassar then at Toeal.

A week or two before I had made arrangements with the natives who were continually crossing from the larger island that they should build me a house high up in the mountains there; and receiving an intimation that it was finished and ready for me, I put about a fortnight's provisions on board the prau and embarked with my servants and hunters about ten o'clock at night. I only had about twenty miles to go, but sometimes, if the winds and currents are not favourable, these vessels take several days to accomplish it. The owner had made it as com-

Digitized by Google

fortable as he possibly could for me by spreading mats on the bamboo floor inside. Nevertheless, the horrible smell of bilge water and rank cocoanut oil prevented me from getting any sleep at all, and I spent most of the night and succeeding day outside. We had, I should imagine, quite forty people on board, men, women, and children, who had begged a passage across, and as these people can sleep anywhere and in any position, even stretched out on a bamboo pole, the overcrowding did not affect them in the least, and it appeared the only one who suffered at all in the matter was the unfortunate being who had chartered the craft for his own convenience.

After a most horrible voyage, spent in the fierce tropical sun, we arrived in the evening of the second day at the settlement, amid the beating of drums, banging of tom-toms, and shouts and yells of the people both on board and on shore. I at once repaired to the house of the Post-holder, the Dutch official stationed there, and although he could not speak a word of any language but his own except Malay, we were obliged to converse in that tongue to one another. He was very pressing in his invitation to me to remain some time with him, and it was only on my promise to pay him a longer visit on my return I was permitted to take my departure to the interior.

With the first peep of dawn on the following morning the Post-holder took me in his small boat (my own people with all the provisions, &c., being in a native prau lent to me for the purpose) to Elraling, a village some few miles up the coast, and from whence it was necessary for me to obtain guides to take me up the mountain where my house had been built. A couple of hours' hard pulling, and we rounded a point and ran into a charming little sandy cove, at the head of which we found the

Digitized by Google

village, where we were received in the most courteous manner by the Orang Kaya (native chief).

This native was one of Nature's gentlemen. He invited us into his house, where he had prepared quite a magnificent feast in my honour, consisting of coffee, cakes, and fruits of all kinds. Here the Post-holder bade me farewell, and the chief at once ordered some sixty men to carry my paraphernalia up the mountain. The natives themselves, however, were very reluctant to go, on account of the many ghosts they said inhabited the higher country; and it was not until the chief had harangued them for quite ten minutes, reminding them that he had been elected their chief by the whole village, and if they did not intend to obey him it was useless having a head man at all, and with the promise of much tobacco from myself, that they were at last induced to start off.

The first part of the journey was very rocky and excessively steep, but after a while, entering the denser forest on the mountain side, the track became better and more easily accessible. I was now passing through the magnificent virgin forest of a country very little known to the white man. The luxuriant undergrowth and the magnificent timber so durable and well known throughout the Moluccas, the picturesque ravines in the hollow of which I found many waterfalls, all added to the beauty of this island. Every now and then from some dazzling height I would catch a peep of the sea with its many little bays and inlets, fringed with beautiful white sand, imparting a most peaceful appearance. I remarked the absence of the native yam and taro gardens one usually sees, and was told that the people almost entirely subsist on cocoanuts and rice, obtaining the latter from the traders who visit here from Aru in exchange for the wooden bowls and native crockery, for the manufacture

Digitized by Google

of which they are noted. These bowls, of which I procured a very fine specimen, are about the size of, and resemble very much, an English wash-tub. They are hewn out of the solid block of wood by the aid of their knives and adzes, and are sent to every country in the Moluccas.

Towards evening, and when I had just about had enough of it, I came upon the small hut which the natives had built for me at an elevation of 3,300 feet above the sea-level. It was entirely built of bamboo and leaves laced together, and about twenty feet square. A sorry looking residence, but one which, so long as it would keep out the wet, would answer my purpose very well, as I was anxious to obtain specimens of natural history by going into the forest from this high point of elevation daily—expecting to find entirely different species from those obtainable down below.

After presenting each carrier with a small Dutch coin and a large handful of tobacco in reward for his services, they all took their departure, and very soon afterwards we all were in the arms of Morpheus, and slept as soundly as possible until the sun was high up the next morning.

By following the various water-courses I captured during my visit here a great many interesting papilios, some being new to the scientific world, but there appeared to be very few birds, and the ones I shot did not appear to differ from those of the coast. My hunters also took it into their heads that there were ghosts and devils roaming about in this strange and silent forest, and it was only by the use of violent threats and promises of extra payment that they could be induced to go any distance away from the hut. Enormous ants and centipedes abounded everywhere—in my bed, my clothes—and in boots that perhaps I

Digitized by Google

had not worn for two days I was sure to find one, if not more, formidable scorpions; but although these objectionable creatures are found in every possible nook and corner, I never had the misfortune to be bitten by any of them. Small, brightly coloured lizards would dart across the path at every few feet, shining in the sunlight like so many beautiful emeralds and turquoises. I also obtained a great variety of beetles, the little "Brenthidae" being the most common, jumping out of the way at every step one took. Sometimes, whilst standing up to my knees in water in a small mountain stream in the very depths of the forest, that beautiful and graceful butterfly, the Papilio Hestia, would come lazily and slowly towards me, a moment afterwards to find itself snugly ensconced in a triangular paper. In this way also I would take that splendid black and yellow Papilio Euchenor, and by means of traps set along the edge of the streams, consisting of sugar mixed with over-ripe bananas, I could very often obtain specimens of the Codrus and other high and swift flying papilios I should never otherwise have been able to capture.

One morning one of my hunters brought me one of those strange marsupials, the Cuscus. It is an animal about two feet in length, and, like the opossum of Australia, has a long, prehensile tail. Its thick, woolly covering gives it the appearance of a very fat Maltese terrier, and it cries very much like an infant. After taking its skin I handed over the carcase to my boys, who quickly cooked and ate it. My rambles in the forest day by day were productive of very successful results, and it was with a certain amount of regret that I was obliged, owing to the discontented nature of my hunters and their excessive fear of the ghosts in the forest, to return to the coast and once more live under

Digitized by Google

the extreme heat of the tropical sun, for the climate I had lately been experiencing at such an elevation was delightful in the extreme.

The Post-holder was very glad to see me again, and the surprise of the natives at our return was very great, for they said they never expected to see us again, thinking the evil spirits would have made away with us. Seeing these simple people were so superstitious, I got as many as possible together in the village one evening and showed them a few sleight of hand tricks, an accomplishment I have possessed in a very modest way for many years, and one I have found very useful to me throughout my travels in the South Seas. Their wonder at seeing a dead chicken placed in a hat, and lay two fine eggs before their eyes, and the few other manipulations with native money, &c., I showed them, was unbounded; and when at last I told them in Malay, the language that most of them understood, that I was now about to turn all the men into women and *vice versâ*, they all disappeared in the twinkling of an eye, and it was with great difficulty I could persuade them to return. One old man followed me wherever I went for some days, until at last I stopped and asked him what it was he wanted, and then with a great many tears he told me his daughter had been married for ten years, but was not blessed with children, and that if I would only come and place a covering over her as I had done to the dead chicken in the hat, he was confident that I could produce her heart's desire.

Here was a fix.

What was I to do to keep up my reputation?

Thinking for a moment, I told him that it was evidently Allah's will that no children had been born to her, and that as it was my greatest desire to please him I could not possibly attempt to go against his wishes. This

Digitized by Google

evidently satisfied him, as he went off and I never saw him again.

During the time I waited here for the prau to take me back to Toeal I took up my residence with the Post-holder and his family, who were very kind, showing me all the attention they possibly could.

One evening, strolling through the village I entered the house of the chief, and was surprised to see the number of brass cannon, muskets and gongs. These I found to be of considerable value, as the natives here consider such articles to be real property, through whose medium they purchase their wives, slaves, and plantations. There were also several small elephant tusks, which had evidently been purchased from the Arab traders.

This village was noted for the manufacture of pottery, and the bowls, jars, and pots are very creditably made, afterwards finding their way even as far as Singapore. After being shaped in the clay they are painted with grotesque designs by the women, and great trouble and care is spent upon them. These women, in a great many instances, had very fine features, and one especially, the daughter of the chief, was a most beautiful girl, and were it not for the fact that her teeth were spoiled from the constant use of the betel nut she would have been as near perfection as possible in face and form. It is the custom with the men to file their teeth down to the very edge of the gum, an operation which imparts a very repulsive look to their features, and I should imagine a very painful one to undergo.

A few days before leaving, accompanied by a native guide, I made an expedition over the mountains to the sea on the other side of the island, and was well repaid for the journey by the capture of many interesting specimens. One village we passed through on the way, and high up in the mountains, was inhabited

Digitized by Google

by a people entirely different from those on the coast. They had long, frizzly hair and features of the Papuan type, and their skin much darker in colour. They were evidently not accustomed to the sight of so strange a being as myself, for they all ran away at my approach into the forest, leaving the village deserted, and although I called many times and my guide shouted to them to come back, they could not be induced to show themselves.

Leaving a small present of tobacco on a stone in the village I passed on, thinking how piteous it was to see so near to civilisation such a wild and ignorant people. A day or two later, the prau being ready, I said goodbye to Great Kei, and late that night, by the aid of a fair wind and twenty strong men as rowers, arrived at Toeal, not at all sorry to be once more in my comfortable prison abode. Here I found an invitation from the French Jesuit missionaries, stationed some few miles distant, to pay them a visit, which I gladly did shortly afterwards, and found them very hospitable. Their Mission House, situated in the middle of one of the largest villages in the Kei Islands, is a very large one and comfortably built, having an enormous verandah running right round it. Adjoining this is the church, a very fine edifice built of wood, and capable of holding from three to four hundred people. On the outside of this building is erected—as I believe is usual in the churches of this order—a large, life-size figure of our Saviour. The image here was a present from some beneficent person in Europe. They told me that on its arrival and during its erection it had suddenly commenced to rain very heavily, when one of the natives had run into the house unseen by any one, and fetched an umbrella, the handle of which he tied to the arm of the figure, and when a few moments later the padre arrived on the scene he was scandalised to find

Digitized by Google

crowds of natives singing and shouting around it thus equipped—for these natives, so unlike the Papuans of New Guinea, are of a most excitable and joyful nature, reminding one of so many school children running riot in a playground.

When at Toeal I had many opportunities of observing the convicts in the prison, which had been built within a few yards of the old edifice where I resided. The extreme laxity of the warders and the excessive licence offered to the delinquents was evidently fully appreciated by them. From daylight until dark their cell doors were never shut, and when they were not working on the roads they were generally seated in groups in front of my house playing at cards or stretched on their backs fast asleep. On Sundays they were allowed to work for any one, and I always employed several of them to go into the forest to shoot for me, and I have no doubt when I went away they missed the "Tuan Ingris" who paid them so well for shooting such small and to them uninteresting birds.

One morning a man arrived all the way from Great Kei, having heard of my powers as a wizard. Some seven or eight days previously, it appeared, he had accidently chopped off one of his fingers. Taking the dismembered portion he stuck it on his hand, wrapping the whole up in some cotton cloth, but finding after some days it had not joined itself again, he took the first opportunity to come across and ask me to make him another finger. It was quite a wonder that blood poisoning had not set in, for the putrid finger was all clotted into the wound. It was with some difficulty I separated it and dressed his hand.

Just at this time I suffered very much from the bite of some small insect which attacked me when walking in the long grass in the forest. This minute creature,

Digitized by Google

which resembles a grain of cayenne pepper, burrowed beneath the skin of my feet and ankles, creating a most intense irritation which would last for four or five days. This happened every time I went off the path into any grass, and after a while my ankles and feet broke out with several most obstinate and inflamed ulcers, eating right into the bone, not only preventing me from walking, but confining me to the house, where I was obliged to lie in a recumbent position owing to the excessive pain when standing. Wounds of this kind are always very difficult to heal in tropical climates, and with every care and precaution, suffering intensely the whole time, it was quite six weeks before I was able to bear a shoe again.

The Rajah of Toeal, a veritable dandy, who was always dressed in the latest of Kei Island fashion, with a gold-embroidered smoking cap and many coloured robes on, paid me a visit one morning, and it was with the greatest difficulty I could prevent him from stealing everything his eye lit on. But the special attraction was a pair of field boots he caught sight of on the verandah. He begged me very hard to give him these, and promised me everything he had, and more that he had not, if I would only let him put them on and walk off through the town in them. However, I was obdurate, referring him to the Chinaman's store, where he could for a few guelders purchase a pair of sandals or even white canvas shoes. "But," he said, "I have not a few 'guelders,'" and then he wept and brought all his persuasive powers into activity again for the loan of two rupees. This time he might have been more successful, if it were only to get rid of him, but at that moment my Chinese boy, Anthony, interposed, and informed me that the Rajah was in his debt to the sum of two rupees twenty cents, and although he had been continually dunning him for the past month for its return,

Digitized by Google

had not been successful. I therefore told the old scoundrel I was ashamed of him, which, apparently, had little or no effect. I told him also that if he would bring me fowls and fruit or eggs I would buy them, and then he could pay back the money he owed, and he faithfully promised he would do so, but I never saw him again.

On the 6th of May my yacht came from Australia, and her arrival caused immense excitement in the town, people coming in from all parts of the "blakang tanna" (back country), to see the "capul aier" (sailing ship), or the "capul Ingris" (English ship), as they called it. Immediately she dropped anchor I went on board, and the captain handed me the ship's register and papers, and informed me that on the passage up he had had the misfortune to break the main boom and had been obliged to lower the top mast and utilise it. I was so anxious to get on to the Aru Islands that I said I would start the next day, and he could then get another boom out of the forest there. So the rest of the day was spent in packing up my numerous collections and getting them on board.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

I DEPART FOR ARU—ARRIVAL AT DOBBO—CHEAP STORES—I SHOOT SOME DEER—I ENGAGE SOME HUNTERS—A SCURVY TRICK—I MOVE ON TO MAYKROR—WE RUN ON TO A REEF—THE MURDER OF A CHINESE TRADER—MY HUNTERS DESERT ME—THE CHIEF STEALS MY CIGARS—I PURCHASE A LIVE PARADISE BIRD.

THE next day, the 7th of May, I bid farewell to Toeal amid the shoutings of the natives, who had gathered down to the shore to view my departure, and after two days' sail arrived at Dobbo, the chief settlement in the Aru Islands.

Dobbo is a village on the island of Wamma, and is situated on a narrow projection of sand only just wide enough to permit of the erection of a few houses. In the south-east monsoon vessels anchor on one side of the village and in the north-west monsoon on the other. It is occupied principally by Chinese and Burgis traders from Macassar, who come in their praus with a fair wind of the one monsoon and return with the other, taking back with them pearl shell and bêche le mer in exchange for clothes, knives, and even money which they bring with them.*

* The Aru Islands are by no means the least important of Dutch possessions, for from Dobbo alone, although only occupied by Burgis and Chinese — and no European ever hardly visits here — many thousands of pounds' worth of native produce are exported annually; the principal, as I have said, being pearl and tortoise shell, trepang or bêche le mer.

Digitized by Google

Immediately I arrived I went on shore to pay a visit to the Post-holder, for the Dutch Government has placed an official here to look after the interests of the pearl fishery and to prevent the importation of arrack into the country. But from my observation regarding the packing of the smaller shell, of prohibitive size, and from the jollifications of the people, I do not consider his presence has any restraint over the one or the other. Unfortunately I found that this gentleman had gone to the blakang tanna, and was not expected back for twenty days. This was the more annoying as it was absolutely impossible to procure native hunters without his help, on account of the thoroughly indolent disposition of everybody here. I had nothing therefore to do but to wait patiently until his return, occupying my time meanwhile in enlarging the saloon and my cabin, painting the ship, and cutting and making a new boom.

The description given of this place in Wallace's "Malay Archipelago" is correct even to-day, and it well might be but only a day ago that he was here and wrote about it instead of over forty years, for the people, who are not at all an ambitious lot, have not altered one single house, I believe.

In all the stores you can buy European articles—for instance, straw hats, soap, cotton cloths, canvas boots, plates and dishes, gaudy coloured handkerchiefs, and even clothes are to be purchased for very moderate sums considering the great journey they have made. I bought some long, cane, deck-chairs and many other little knick-knacks of European manufacture.

On the 17th of June the steamer arrived, this being the farthest port of call of the Shipping Co.'s. steamers, except that twice or three times a year they are under contract with the Dutch Government to go on from here to 141° off the coast of New Guinea, where their possessions meet the

Digitized by Google

British portion. Here they lie for forty-eight hours and in the wet season quite out of sight of land, as the shallowness of the water there and the numerous reefs will not permit of their getting within a mile or so of the coast.

The Controlleur of Kei was on board, having come to pay an official visit to these islands, and the same afternoon he paid me a visit on the yacht, accompanied by the portly Post-holder, who had returned to Dobbo the previous evening. He gave me messages to the chiefs in the south of the group, requesting them to help me in every way they could.

On this day I spent a few hours in the forest and was fortunate enough to procure two magnificent specimens of the Sambur deer, which have been imported and are now to be found in great quantities here. That evening, at my earnest request, the Post-holder paid me another visit, bringing with him several natives, who called themselves Portuguese, for me to engage as hunters, but he told me it were better for me to go to another island in the group if I desired to get any work out of them, as they are so lazy and will do nothing unless away from home.

After much trouble and many journeys into the forest my captain found, on the island of Wokan, a mile or two distant, a suitable tree for a boom, and having felled it I engaged forty natives to drag it to the beach some mile and a half distant. This took the whole of our day, and for ten succeeding ones my captain, boatswain, and crew were hard at work making it into the spar I required.

It was just finished, and a few hours before I intended getting it on board some one came off and told me to come and look at it. From his looks and gestures I feared there was something amiss, and jumping into my gig was pulled ashore, only to find that some scoundrel had, with a fine saw, cut right through the centre, leaving but an inch or so to keep it together. This blackguardly

Digitized by Google

act must have taken some considerable time to accomplish, and although I offered a reward big enough to purchase a really good spar from a shipwright's yard at home, I never succeeded in discovering the culprit. Suspicion fell very heavily on the only carpenter in the island, a Chinaman, whom I had previously engaged to help make the alterations on the ship, but who had stolen so many odds and ends every time he came on board that after two days I paid him for what he had done and politely informed him that if he showed his pigtail within a hundred yards of the ship again I would cut it off.

Here was a pretty go, a fortnight's hard work for all my men wasted and no boom!

Luckily the old one had not been thrown away, so re-adjusting it I set sail on the following morning for Maykror, one of the more southern islands of the group, and taking with me eight hunters. Owing to headwinds and contrary tides, however, the journey, which could have been taken in only a few hours, was not accomplished under four days. On the second day out my man at the masthead must have gone to sleep, for we ran on to a reef, but luckily there was hardly any wind and the sea as smooth as glass, so that after a very short delay and with the aid of two kedge anchors we managed to get off without any damage being done. On Sunday afternoon I arrived at the mouth of the Watelai river after many hours' beating up the Wannambai Straits.

In the evening, the tide being in our favour, we managed to drift up the river for about two miles, and anchored at the mouth of a small creek on the south side. This creek I found to be only navigable for a boat for about a mile. At the head of it I found a small stream of fresh water.

Here I found, half hidden by the thick undergrowth and completely surrounded by the huge trees of this

Digitized by Google

virgin forest, one solitary house, if indeed I could give it such a dignified appellation. It certainly was a dwelling, for it contained at least forty people, with an interior of not more than twenty feet square. This was the very house occupied by the man whose name is so familiar to every naturalist—I refer to Alfred Russell Wallace—and occupied as it was in his time, by numerous families, who greeted me with most vociferous acclamations of joy. And although they are the children and grandchildren of those the great naturalist found here, they have rather gained than lost the faculty of speech. Every one appeared to try and shout louder than his fellow and one and all crowded round my boat, and laughed and ran and jumped for joy.

My collections, I am sorry to say, got on but slowly, owing to my lazy hunters, who would start off at sunrise with an amount of energy that would inspire one with the hope that they would return overladen with the good things of the forest, but immediately they were out of sight they would make for the nearest native house to remain there until the sun was fast sinking in the west, when they would return with the news that "This place he no good, place belong me he plenty good too much," meaning to say that if I would only take them back they would be able to bring me everything, which I knew would be nothing.

A few days after I arrived here a Chinaman passed me in his prau, and I told him it would be better for him to anchor near me and not attempt the smaller creek; but he wanted to anchor close to the one solitary house, as he could then trade better and with less trouble with the families it contained. The next morning at daylight the news was brought me that he had been murdered and his ship burned. I at once went to the scene and found his body stripped

Digitized by Google

of all clothing and tied by the pigtail to a mangrove stump.

There was an enormous wound in the left side, apparently made by a parang (Malay knife), which had been so forcibly driven into his side that there was a small cut where the point had shown itself on the other side, completely disembowelling him. The only man he had with him to help him sail his prau was a half-caste Malay and Burgis, whom I at once sought and interviewed. I found him, not far away, standing on the bank of the creek and in conversation with a bloodthirsty looking ruffian, who had as much low-caste Javanese blood as he had Papuan in his veins, and who was evidently in league with the sailor. I asked him how it happened, and how it came that the ship, of which I saw the charred remains, was burned, and that he was on shore with his boxes and all his clothes, and yet the Chinaman's were all burned. He told me he was awakened in the night by the fire, and hastily taking his own things managed to land in safety. And he first said he thought the wild people had come down from the interior and murdered the Chinaman and set fire to the vessel, and afterwards he said that the Chinaman had killed himself when he saw his prau on fire. This I knew to be impossible, as the wound had evidently been delivered from behind. Also I knew that the natives in Aru are a very friendlily disposed people, and even if they were not they are of such a superstitious nature that nothing could have induced them to have come in the night to commit such an atrocity. He appeared to be very frightened of me and was so anxious that I told him there was no doubt but that he was the murderer himself. I learned later in the day that the Chinaman had a valuable pearl on board, which he had found in a pearl oyster, and also three hundred guelders, and my firm belief is that this miserable scoundrel waited till the poor man was

Digitized by Google

asleep in his bunk and lying on his face—a common enough custom amongst natives—and then stabbing him from above had robbed him of his pearl and money, and set fire to the ship in the hope that the body would be consumed in the flames. On my return to Dobbo I informed the Post-holder of my convictions, who immediately sent for the man and had him arrested, but whether he ever received the punishment which his offence deserved it is hard to say.

July 5th.—The murder has had such an effect on my hunters, or at least they pretend it has, that they one and all refuse to go into the forest and insist on returning home. I said I intended remaining, even if I had to go into the forest by myself. (I have often thought how miraculous it is that, however far one may take a native away from his home, he has always means of hearing from his relations, and the only message he ever receives is that they are indisposed and require his presence before there is any chance of their becoming convalescent.) They all said that their wives, fathers, mothers, cousins, in fact all their relations, were so seriously ill that unless they immediately returned they would all die. I told them I would not pay them any wages at all, and would request the Post-holder at Dobbo to make them give back the cloth and knives I had already paid them in advance, and that their time was not up for another month; but they were obdurate and said, with a smile, in their very best Malay, that the Tuan (Mister) might certainly speak to the Post-holder as much as he liked, but one thing was certain—they would go home and nothing should induce them to stay.

They therefore obtained a large canoe from some other natives, and started off to Dobbo without any wages. I afterwards learned that they had received intimation that Dobbo was now overflowing with people. Traders from

Digitized by Google

Java, Ceram, Singapore, and all parts of the Moluccas had arrived, and in fact the society season had commenced, therefore little wonder was it that they preferred to lie about and roam at will in the streets of so animated a town, to the more monotonous occupation of catching butterflies and shooting paradise birds in a lonely forest.

I set sail the next morning for Maykror, a village further south, to ascertain its advantages as a collecting ground later. We arrived the same evening and anchored a few hundred yards off the shore. The village was a model of cleanliness, and was inhabited by a people who differ most materially from the natives of Wannambai, who are for the most part Papuan with some Ceram, some Malay, and a little Chinese blood in their veins, exhibiting one of the most extraordinary mixtures of breeding it is possible to imagine. Here they are very much brighter in colour, and are distinctly descendants of the early Portuguese navigators, and although a great many had bought Aru women for their wives, the majority of them had women of their own nationality—if it is possible to strain the point and acknowledge them to belong to any one particular race.

Nevertheless they were all dressed in cotton clothing and begged me to sell them soap. I may here mention that this was the first and only occasion during the whole period of my expeditions that I was ever asked for this commodity. I was lucky enough to have with me two or three cases, and by its means I was enabled to purchase fowls and eggs. The former are in great demand throughout the whole group, the natives oftentimes asking as much as two guelders (3s. 4d.) apiece for them. But I secured as many as I wanted for half a bar of soap, value 2d. each. I found a church, a school, and a pottery, for the natives here send out many thousands of earthen pots to far-away islands every year.

Digitized by Google

The women were very comely to look at, being fat and well cared for, which is not usual amongst Papuan tribes. The Orang Kayer (rich man or chief) paid me a visit directly I let go the anchor. He was dressed in a black coat and hat with white trousers and boots, which kept him in a constant state of unrest the whole time he was on board. If I would only stay, he said, he would help me in every way and make some of his people work for me. But instead of helping me he helped himself, for I found after he had gone that a box of cigars and a bottle of rum I had produced in his honour had disappeared. He had passed them over the ship's side while I was down below for a moment, and my own steward told me he saw him do it, but thought I must have given them to him.

I tried in vain to see him afterwards, but was always informed he had gone into the forest and no one knew where to find him. This was the result of a little civilisation, he having received his education (viz., his knowledge of clothes) at Amboyna; for in Dobbo, where there are no courts of justice nor police, and only one official, himself a half-caste, and for whom the people care little or nothing, the natives, who are about as ignorant and bloodthirsty looking a lot of cut-throats as it would be possible to find anywhere on the face of the globe, can positively leave their houses open and unguarded day and night without fear of molestation or robbery; and although a man will cheat his neighbour over a deal, and is considered a smart fellow for so doing, petty larceny or crimes of this sort, which seldom or never occur, are looked upon with universal ill favour.

Just before leaving this village I observed a sight which caused me to modify my conclusions about the cleanliness of these people. A man was squatting on the ground with a naked girl, about fifteen years of age, laid across his legs, while with the point of a knife he was literally

Digitized by Google

picking out the parasites from her head, and I felt as I gazed upon the slaughter that I would have given the price of a good many fowls which I had come on shore to purchase to have missed the sight. I will be indulgent, however, and say that perhaps they had run out of soap for some time, and now that they had it again things would change.

My cook took a stroll into the forest one evening, and was rewarded with a very fat wild pig which he shot, and which kept the yacht going for a few days in fresh meat.

Just before leaving this place a native brought me, in a small bamboo cage, a very fine specimen of the great paradise bird. It was a fine male, and I instantly bought it, and very soon afterwards transferred it into a large cage which one of my sailors made for it. Becoming very tame, it would feed out of my hand, and lived for many months afterwards, and every one on board became much attached to it.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

RETURN TO DOBBO—A GAY SEASON—THE ARRIVAL OF THE STEAMER—COCK FIGHTING—A NATIVE BURIAL GROUND — NATIVE LEGENDS — A DEAD CHIEF — A LOATHSOME CEREMONY—MY STEWARD MUTINIES—ARRIVAL AT AIDOEMA—I VISIT A WOMAN CHIEF—TRITON BAY—I DISCOVER THE ANCIENT REMAINS OF FORMER ENGLISH HABITATIONS — TERRIBLE MAN TRAPS—DEPART FOR ETNA BAY.

On the 15th of July I arrived in Dobbo again with a fair wind, and I may here say that this was the first I had encountered since setting sail in these waters, and I am not the first to travel in the South Seas who has complained of the Clerk of the Weather treating him with scant courtesy in this respect. As a rule, if you desire to travel north the wind invariably blows from that quarter, if south, it comes from the south, and the same rule exists for every other point of the compass.

Dobbo presented a very different appearance now. There were hundreds of people, who had arrived during my absence, who had brought cargoes of sarongs, plates, knives, and many other articles to trade with the natives for their tripang—pearl shell, bêche le mer, tortoise shell, and other island produce.

The praus, which numbered considerably over a hundred, were all hauled up on the beach, and men were soon caulking them with chinam and painting them, preparatory

Digitized by Google

to their departure : for the trading season, which does not last long, will soon be over for the year, and Dobbo again deserted, save for the few remaining Chinamen who are so heavily in debt in more civilised parts of the world that they choose to remain here to sleep and smoke away another year.

The morning after my arrival I started into the forest, and after walking along the beach for about a mile turned in past several mangrove swamps to higher ground and had a very successful day. It is not my intention to describe here the various birds I shot, which I have included in the Appendix of this volume, but I cannot leave the Aru Islands without mentioning a few facts concerning the large, black cockatoo which I first met with here — the *Macroglossum aterrimum*. This bird, which has a plaintive note and one quite unlike the shrill scream of the cockatoo of Australia, is entirely black with the exception of the cheeks, which are a bright red. There is a powdery substance covering the whole plumage, and which I first took to be dust, but found afterwards to be the secretion characteristic of the cockatoo family. Its head is enormous in comparison to the body, which is very small and weak, and it owns a large, hooked bill of astounding strength. It lives principally on the kernel of the canary nut, which it expertly cracks.

To those of my readers who have met with the canary nut and are, therefore, cognisant of the hardness of its shell, I need say nothing, but to those who have been less fortunate (I say less fortunate advisedly, for the nut itself is most delicious, resembling a new walnut or filbert), I say that the canary nut requires a very hard blow with a sledge-hammer to make any impression on it at all, and I have spent sometimes a quarter of an hour with an ordinary hammer before getting at the nut inside.

Digitized by Google

This bird, however, takes it endways in its bill, saws away until it cuts a notch in it and then, by fixing this notch in the lower mandible, by a supreme effort breaks off a portion of the shell. Then with the upper mandible, which is long and sharply pointed, it picks out the kernel, which is immediately seized by its prehensile tongue.

On the 17th of July the steamer arrived, bringing me four Macassar men I had engaged as hunters from Kei, a fresh supply of provisions, and three thousand more cartridges, so that I was now enabled to leave for the promised land of all naturalists—New Guinea.

The people of Aru are extremely fond of cock-fighting, and nearly every man owns a favourite bird, which he is always ready and willing to back against his neighbour's. It is no uncommon sight to see them sitting on the ground with an enormous rooster standing up between their legs, massaging it, an operation apparently very much enjoyed by the bird, who remains perfectly still, whether on his feet or his back, during the whole operation.

The Aru women wear a considerable number of ornaments, but the men, like all true Papuans, wear by far the greater number. The ear-rings worn by the women are made of copper or silver in the shape of a plain bar, which is passed through a hole in the lobe, and twisted over so that the ends cross, and when there is no more room, the sides and top of the ear are treated likewise. I have sometimes seen so many of these ear-rings that the ears of the wearer were completely pulled over with the weight.

Outside the houses and under the eaves can be seen baskets in rows for the fowls to lay in. Inside, red, green, and blue lorries, and half-starved native dogs, pigs, and cats roam at will.

In the evening melancholy Malay songs are heard issuing

Digitized by Google

from the praus and beach, while mixed with the noise of Jews'-harps, tom-toms, and perhaps a mouth-organ, can be heard an occasional Portuguese hymn-tune sung to Malay words. In the midst of all some frantic yells, shouts, and screams are heard and one is made aware that an interesting cock-fight is taking place.

Just outside the village, and a little way along the sandy shore, I came upon the native burial-ground, and another instance of the honesty of those far-away savages is evinced by the fact that on each tomb I found very many of the shell armlets so much sought after and prized by the natives, and which occupy some months in their manufacture. These probably the property of the deceased, are laid upon a wooden ornament which marks his burial-place, and yet none are ever stolen.

I did not stay to examine the graves, as the native who accompanied me, and who spoke Malay fairly well, informed me that the people did not like any one looking upon their tombs, and knowing that any trespass of this kind is always resented, I respected their superstition and came away.

There are many legends among the inhabitants of these islands, generally told by the old men, and always thoroughly believed in by the people. The principal is that many years ago some strangers arrived in big ships and fought with them, carrying away their chiefs and a great number of women and children, whom they still believe to be alive, and are continually asking of the traders who now visit the group if they have heard any tidings of them. When I was questioned about their whereabouts I said that wherever they went to it was quite certain that they were dead long ago, whereupon they scornfully told me I didn't know anything at all about it. Were not they themselves alive, and their fathers had told them of their chiefs' capture?

Digitized by Google

So had not the chiefs themselves told their children and why did they, the children, not come back?

I had many messages given me by these simple people to give these imaginary ones, all of which I faithfully promised to deliver if I ever met with them.

Before I left the group I anchored at a small village on the island of Wassia to take in water, as the water of Dobbo was so bad, and indeed, if there happened to be a drought, I have no conception how the inhabitants would exist, for there is no river in the whole group, and with the exception of one or two very small creeks, all the water obtained by the people has to be dug for, and is consequently of a very brackish nature.

At the village I found a great concourse of people who had come from a long distance, as the chief of the place, who happened to be an old and influential man, had died some two weeks previously. The body, which was not yet buried, was laid out on a bamboo stage inside the principal house in the village. There were great lamentations, doleful songs were sung, and tom-toms beaten without ceasing all day and night, and it appeared that ever since the man died weird noises and much shouting had been carried on from sunrise to sunset, and so all through the night; also they never seemed to tire of keeping vigil beside the corpse of the once powerful warrior. I sent some of my men into the house to see what the body looked like, but they very soon came away, saying it was terribly swollen, and being eaten by the thousands of ants which were crawling all over it.

The day I arrived, I was informed, was the one on which the last rite was to be performed, and although I did not personally go ashore to see this loathsome ceremony, one or two of my people did, and they told me that the body, which had assumed huge proportions, was taken out of the house and laid on another

Digitized by Google

bamboo stage raised about three feet from the earth. The head and feet being fastened with rattan at either end, the body sank slightly towards the centre, and owing to its terribly decomposed condition a thick, dark, mattery fluid emerged and dropped to the ground. Natives now came from all parts, and holding out banana leaves or cocoanut shells caught some and drank it, thereby believing that they were imbibing the virtues of their dead chief. It was with a sense of sickening horror that I ordered my captain to heave up the anchor and make sail as fast as possible from a place where the people filled me with so much loathing and disgust.

July 19th.—I steered a straight course for Aidoema, an island on the east coast of Dutch New Guinea, and after a tolerably fair passage I arrived at the Straits of Aidoema, and entering at the south end anchored for the night.

Just as it was getting dark I observed several canoes slowly creeping down close to the land, but although I called out to the natives in them they could not be induced to come nearer than hailing distance of the yacht. My Chinese servant on board had begged me at Aru to let him remain behind, but of course, having no other, I refused. He told me that he had heard that no one ever returned alive from New Guinea, and would I let him go.

As a result of my refusal, he laid down on the passage across, saying he was seasick, and would not do a stroke of work. When the anchor was down I went forward to the forecastle and called to him to get up and come and make ready my table for dinner. He came up, but said he was too sick, at the same time, taking up two large carving-knives, made as if to stab me. Quick as lightning my revolver was out and covering him, whereupon he dropped both knives, and, falling down, implored

Digitized by Google

me to spare his life. This act of cowardice is truly characteristic of the Chinese race. In stabbing a man in the back they excel to perfection, but to meet a man face to face is not within their category of possibilities. The punishment he received taught him such a lesson that he never again disobeyed me during the whole time he was in my service. At daybreak the following morning I sailed up the coast looking for the village I had heard was hereabouts. Shortly afterwards I saw signs of life in the shape of cocoanuts waving to and fro in the breeze. Then a canoe or two would shoot out into the strait a mile or so ahead and pull across to the mainland. At last I saw, in a little inlet, some houses, and, letting go in twelve fathoms only a few hundred yards from the beach, I quickly had my boat lowered and went ashore. The chief here was a woman—a most unusual occurrence—and was styled the Rajah Prumpoean, or Woman Chief. She received me very cordially in a tolerably well-constructed house on the beach, built high up on piles some twenty feet from the ground and entered by very uneven steps made of bamboo or wood poles lashed to two upright posts. She was surrounded by many courtiers, men, women, and children. The Arab traders who visit here once every year have certainly done a great deal to further the civilisation of these people, teaching them the Malay language and giving them clothes to wear in exchange for paradise birds' skins (the Burrong Mass, or Gold Bird, as it is called, being the bird which has a market value), tortoise shell, and pearls. I purchased two or three of the latter, which were of fair size and colour, for a few needles, a reel of cotton, and a sarong. The queen wore a great many ear-rings, similar to those worn by the women of Aru, and also many cheap and tawdry rings, such as are to be found in a prize-packet, and which I suspect had been received for pearls and

Digitized by Google

skins. I offered her a small gold chain if she would get me some more pearls, but she exclaimed, "Teda mass" —Malay for "not gold." My assurances were of no avail, the more especially after one man had taken it and put it in the sea for a short time and nothing happened to it; for he said had it been real gold like the things the Arabs gave them, the salt water would have turned it black. I may mention that the ornaments to which he alluded are of some very inferior metal only very slightly gilt over. The dishonesty of the Arab and his wonderful power of persuasion have even reached this far-away spot, and the unsophisticated savage has been imposed upon. Had I some cheap trinkets now, such as are to be found in the celebrated arcade in Piccadilly, I could return laden with pearls.

The Rajah Prumpoean was kind enough to give me two men to accompany me into Triton Bay, which directly faces the island on which she has taken up her residence, and she further promised others to shoot birds for me in a day or two.

The women on this island wear their hair in a different manner to the Papuans further south. It is done up into three plaits, starting from the front of the head and traversing it right over to the nape of the neck, imparting a very strange appearance as if their craniums were devoid of all hair, but that they had taken three baker's twists, and, plastering them on their heads, had then painted them black and smoke-dried them in a chimney.

In the afternoon I bid adieu to her Majesty and sailed to the head of the bay, where I anchored at the mouth of a very large river, apparently running between two high ranges of mountains. I also perceived on the left bank some signs of former European habitation in the shape of a portion of a stone jetty and some large blocks of stone,

Digitized by Google

which might have formed the foundations of substantial houses. I also perceived lime and bread-fruit trees. The natives, who could speak a little Malay, told me that formerly, and many years ago, the Orang Ingris, *i.e.*, Englishmen, lived here, so their fathers had said. Indeed, it is quite possible that they may have done so, for it will be remembered that in 1620 the Dutch drove the English out of Bantam, and they went to Amboyna, where a few years later they were the victims of a plot invented by a Dutchman for their destruction, and were again routed, some escaping to the mainland of New Guinea. This is very correctly styled The Massacre of Amboyna, and took place on the 17th of February, 1623.

What eventually became of the few who thus escaped is uncertain, but in all probability those who survived the terrible ravages of the malarious climate in this part of the world were killed and eaten by the cannibal inhabitants of these shores. How long they did exist I cannot tell, but they must have felt that they were condemned to a living tomb here in this desolate spot where no man ever comes or goes, and where no other sound is heard save the "wok, wok" of the paradise bird, the screech of the cockatoo, or the weird and distressing boom of the tom-tom to remind them that a cannibal repast is taking place close by. The bay itself is entirely landlocked with precipitous mountains towering up directly from the water's edge on either side, and I hardly think it possible, even in the heart of Switzerland to behold grander scenery.

I found no natives living on the shore, but my guides informed me that a long way off and high up in the mountains, the Arfours (wild men of the mountains), reside, and that if I would let one or two of my own men go with them with rifles to protect them, they would go and call them down to see me, when I might persuade

Digitized by Google

them to obtain new or rare paradise birds. I therefore sent four men, who after proceeding a mile or so, returned to the coast owing to the terrible dangerous traps that at every stride lay in their path.

These traps, which are set by the Arfours to prevent enemies approaching their mountain retreat, consist of small spikes of iron wood, about ten inches long, and steeped in the juice of some poisonous plant. They are firmly imbedded in the ground with the exception of two or three inches, which is left at an angle of forty-five degrees and pointing towards the sea coast. These are placed in the native tracks a few feet apart, and are expertly hidden by twigs or leaves, but on any one walking upon them they penetrate right through the foot, being so finely pointed.

On the second day after my arrival here I obtained a very poor specimen of the *Paradisea nigra*, and one magnificent specimen of the beautiful crown pigeon of New Guinea. This bird, which is the size of a turkey, weighs about twelve pounds, is a beautiful bluish grey, and has a superb crest of fan-like feathers. It proved a truly excellent dish. Several praus arrived in the evening, and the natives all seemed very anxious to go and shoot for me in the mountains.

The next morning the natives brought me a great many of the spikes I have mentioned: they had found them in all the paths leading from the beach. A native had one foot entirely pierced by one, and had I not immediately withdrawn it and properly dressed the wound, very serious results might have followed. It is the custom amongst these natives that if the loin-cloth which a man wears, made of the bark of trees, is wound tightly round him all is well, and you may approach him with safety, but should it be hanging down from behind, then beware, for he is in his fighting apparel, and is on the war-path,

Digitized by Google

and sharpening his cannibal teeth preparatory to a feast.

After spending a few days here and finding it impossible to hunt the forest on account of these frightful man-traps, I started on the 23rd of July for Etna Bay.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

A NATIVE PILOT—HE DESERTS ME—CONTRARY WINDS AND CURRENTS—TRAVEL THREE HUNDRED MILES FOR NOTHING—ARRIVE IN KYAMAKA BAY—ETNA BAY—ARRIVAL OF NATIVES—POINTED TEETH—TERRIBLE FIGHT WITH NATIVES—THREE OF MY MEN MURDERED—CONTINUOUS FIGHTING—I CAPTURE THE CHIEF—LEAVE ETNA BAY—RETURN AT TOEAL—DUTCH GOVERNMENT—THE DRY SEASON—SCARCITY OF LIVING CREATURES—THE QUEEN OF HOLLAND'S BIRTHDAY—ARRIVAL OF MAIL STEAMER—I DEPART FOR PORT DARWIN.

THE old man I had engaged to pilot us, and to shoot in the forest, begged me to let him go as we sailed past his house, putting forward the usual excuse—his wife's sickness. I told him he had promised to remain for a month with me, and that if he left now he would go unpaid. He then promised to follow me in a day or two, but as he asked me to give him his wages I felt certain that he had no such intention, and told him so, whereupon he intimated that he considered me a very cruel man, and the spirits had told him his wife was really very ill and that he only just wanted to go on shore to look at her and then he would come straight back to me. I again refused to allow him to do so, knowing that every word he was uttering was an untruth, it being nothing but his cowardly fear to go so far from home. Besides, I felt quite justi-

Digitized by Google

fied in endeavouring to keep him, as he had not only been ordered by the queen to come with me but also had an accurate knowledge of the many reefs and different passages down the coast. He said nothing more, but watching his opportunity when I was below at tiffin he quietly slipped over the ship's side and swam ashore. I was sorry to lose him, as, apart from his seafaring knowledge, he was a very interesting old cannibal, and amused us on many occasions by his droll remarks and many native superstitions. Besides all this he had become an excellent shot and had brought me many good things from the depths of the forest. Towards evening the wind freshened, and at ten o'clock was blowing so hard we were compelled to stand out to sea. This gale lasted for two days, during the whole of which time I was under closely reefed sails. On the third day the weather cleared a little and we made the land, but unfortunately instead of being at Etna Bay, so strong had been the current to leeward that we found ourselves back in Triton Bay, after covering a distance of at least three hundred miles. We then made our way through the inner passage and inside the straits, and after struggling for a whole week against a most terrific current we managed to put into Kyamaka Bay, after accomplishing a distance of only twelve miles. We were all so tired after being knocked about for so long that I ordered the captain to find a suitable anchorage so that we could stay here and have a good night's rest. Kyamaka Bay extends north and south for a considerable distance inside the headland. It has not yet been surveyed, but I found deep water everywhere. I sailed all round the bay in my endeavours to discover the existence of natives, but with the exception of a few frigate birds, who seemed to inhabit a large rock some distance down the bay and close to the mainland, and

Digitized by Google

one or two cocoanut trees dotted here and there, the whole bay was apparently deserted.

On a small island or, rather, a long rock, at the entrance of the bay I observed a very curious instance of water being forced to some considerable height, which I should estimate at over a hundred feet. The water is dashed with great fury against this rock, when it apparently proceeds to some underground channel, and from thence it is forced in dense volumes through a small hole in the top of the rock, giving it in the distance the appearance of the spurting of a huge whale.

The next morning we again got under way and made another attempt to reach Etna Bay, which was now only a mile or two distant round the headland, but after battling for nine hours against a strong head wind and terrific current were obliged to put back and spend another night in the same anchorage.

At daylight one more start was made, and the distance of three miles into Etna Bay was at last accomplished after eighteen hours' hard beating, making it eleven days to cover a distance of fifteen miles. The currents along this coast are the strongest I have ever experienced. They are influenced very greatly by the different monsoons, sometimes travelling at the rate of twelve miles in the hour, so that in the south-east monsoon it is practically impossible for a sailing ship to beat along the coast. Etna Bay, after proceeding in a northerly direction for a few miles, turns off to the eastwards and winds itself between two ranges of mountains for seventeen miles, and at its widest place hardly reaching half a mile across.

A very pretty waterfall at the entrance of the narrower portion of the bay rushed down from a considerable height over precipitous rocks into the sea beneath. I proceeded to the very head of the bay and some four miles further

Digitized by Google

than the line of soundings given on the chart, and finding there a comparatively suitable spot whence I could make some extensive collections and where a few small rivulets ran down between the ravines to the beach, I anchored and made preparations for a long visit. As there were no cocoa-nuts to be seen, and nothing but dense forest running to the very water's edge, I concluded that there were no natives in the neighbourhood, the last sign of life I had seen being a few houses on a small sandy beach at the entrance of the bay. I was surprised, however, to find, immediately I went ashore, many traces of people, and of very recent date: in fact, some one had evidently been there on the previous day, as branches and twigs that had been broken were not yet withered, but although I called and caused a gun to be fired no one put in an appearance.

The next morning we all made excursions to the forest, and although it was a very cloudy day were very successful in securing many prizes. One female ornithoptera I captured repaid me for the hard task I had experienced in reaching there. Immediately I saw it I knew it to be something new; it has since been described as a new species. I extracted an egg from the body, as I was most desirous, if possible, to obtain the male.*

* This egg, after a lapse of a week, hatched into a caterpillar, and then it was, if I had any doubt before, that I knew it to be a new species; the white stripe common to all ornithoptera caterpillars was missing, the red spikes were not there, and the insect itself was very much larger at birth. I managed, after a great amount of trouble, to secure the right food for it, and nursed it most carefully until it assumed the form of a chrysalis. I then imagined that all my trouble was finished, and I was delighted to see that it must evidently, on account of its size and shape, be the male. Everything went well until I arrived at Port Darwin a month or two afterwards, where of course I took it on shore with me, as by that time I was expecting it daily to hatch out. Placing it in a small, open box in my bedroom, I hung it from a beam so that it would be secure. What was then my horror to be awakened in the middle of the night by a strange noise, and

Digitized by Google

Amongst many other species of lepidoptera no less interesting, together with five magnificent specimens of the *Paradisea apoda*, three of the *Paradisea nigræ*, a superb and very rare kingfisher, and five or six other smaller birds, all of which had rarely or never been exhibited in European cabinets, were the result of my first tramp in that great virgin forest, never before trodden by the foot of the white man.

Towards evening on the 5th of August I sighted a canoe on the northern side of the bay; it was occupied by some ten or twelve natives, who hailed us from a long distance and spoke a dialect of the Ceram language which was luckily partially understood by one of my Macassar hunters. Their speaking this language was very strange and only showed me that at some remote date these people must have had connection with the Ceramese notwithstanding the considerable distance which separates them. They had the Dutch flag hoisted in the canoe, but they could not be induced to come any closer until I went off to them alone in a boat bareheaded, when after much gesticulating and promises of presents made to them by signs, they were enticed to the yacht. They seemed very frightened, and were continually asking me with unmistakable motions, such as the drawing of their fingers across their throats, if it was my intention to kill them. They very soon gained confidence, however, and all came on board, when they received each man something. These men were miserably thin and were evidently half starved, for they ate most ravenously the huge bowls of cooked rice and taros which I had placed before them, offering me in exchange

jumping up to find a huge rat had climbed down the cord and seized my treasure in his mouth and was even then making off with it. That was the last I ever saw of what I had reason to believe was a male of this species.

A male has since been discovered which proves to be far more beautiful though not unlike the *Ornithoptera paradisea*.

Digitized by Google

a few bows and arrows and small arm-rings, &c. At sunset they departed, promising to return on the following morning.

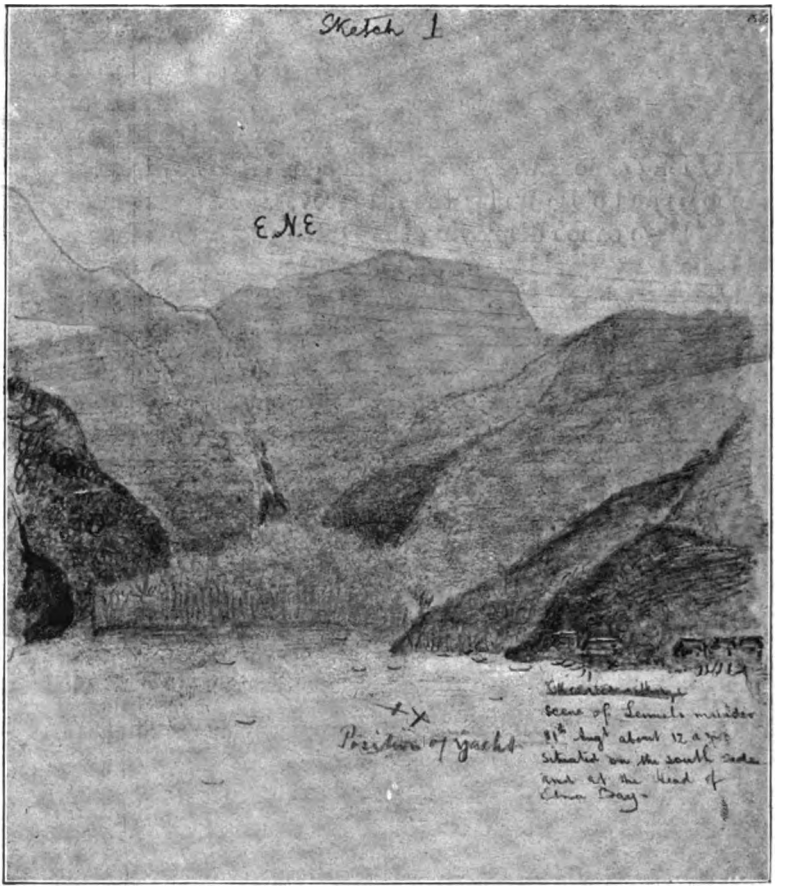
At daybreak on the 6th of August the man on watch reported many canoes approaching filled with people. I at once came on deck and invited them on board, and after some hesitation they came—men, women, and children. All day long canoes were seen gliding down the bay from both shores and close under the mangroves. At about midday one large canoe displaying the Dutch flag came alongside. It held a very old man, who had to be carried on board by his wife, who told us that he was the head man of the tribe. They were all ravenously hungry, and it was most amusing to watch the great amount of greediness displayed, especially by the men, when food was placed before them, the whole scene reminding me somewhat of the feeding of the animals at the Zoological Gardens, only, unlike that establishment, I am afraid the females and the children did not fare equally with the opposite sex.

After they had filled their commissariat departments, they all gathered together to hear what I had come for, and when I explained as best I could that it was for beetles and butterflies they all laughed very much and were anxious to start right away and search the forest. The old man promised me his assistance, and at once sent several men to see what they could find. Their clothing, which was of the scantiest description, consisted only of a piece of fibre no thicker than stout twine and fastened round the loins; a narrow piece of native cloth about an inch wide was passed through the legs, hanging over slightly in front and behind; every one had plaited hair.

I was sorry, however, to see that the majority of them had their teeth sharpened to points, resembling the tooth of the shark, this being in my own personal experience a very bad sign in natives. They asked me if I would like

Digitized by Google

to purchase one or two girls whom they had for sale. When I asked them what I should do with them, they



ETNA BAY, THE SCENE OF OUR FIGHT.

intimated that of course I should fatten them for a purpose which shall be nameless.

For some succeeding days they were busy erecting leaf houses, and collecting various specimens for me, and my

Digitized by Google

own hunters and I went without hindrance into the dense forest, the natives apparently being of a most friendly disposition, and gaining confidence daily when they saw I had not come to harm them.

But alas! on the 11th of August, all my good opinions of them were horribly and suddenly dispelled by the terrible and determined onslaught they made upon us, and my early fears, which I had formed owing to their sharpened teeth, were indeed realised. Early on this morning two of my crew went on shore as usual to shoot, and after breakfast the butterfly collectors were taken in the whale-boat by my boatswain, Johnston, and one of the sailors, round a point about a mile distant, where there was a very good river, on the banks of which they told me they had seen many fine butterflies the day before.

Shortly after they started a very large canoe, containing about twenty-five people, came alongside, and all its occupants came on deck, including one old woman, who brought with her a child, which she was very anxious for me to purchase. Their manner was even more friendly than usual, and through this I then, for the first time, suspected hostile intentions, and so, taking away a large knife, with a blade about fifteen inches in length, from a man who was sitting on the taffrail close to the back of my chair, I told the captain to keep a good look out.

It is my firm belief that this act saved my life. The natives, evidently observing my suspicions, commenced talking very excitedly amongst themselves, and I must say that the boat, which by now had had ample time to return, and was not forthcoming, caused me very much anxiety —so much so that I was on the point of sending some one after it when I observed what I first took to be the boat, but afterwards found was a large canoe, returning from round the point; and had I known then that its coming

Digitized by Google

heralded the accomplishment of their bloody deed not one man, woman or child of those twenty-five on board the yacht should have lived to have reached the shore. Seeing then that their own mission, which had evidently been to murder us and seize the ship, had proved futile, they at once departed, and not a moment too soon for them, for about a quarter of an hour afterwards "Jimmy," one of the two hunters who had started at daybreak in the morning, was observed rushing down to the beach and entering the water. I shouted to him to know the reason, when he called out, "Fire the big gun; Lennel has been killed."

At that moment a shower of arrows and spears were seen whizzing through the air over his head, as he swam out to the ship, but fortunately not one struck him. I then brought the Krupp gun I had mounted on deck to bear upon the beach, and by its assistance kept back the swarming natives from following him, and a few moments afterwards he reached the ship in safety. He told me that he and Lennel were just returning from the bush with a number of paradise birds, the result of their morning's work, and were sitting down in front of the village, drinking the cocoanuts the natives had given them, when he suddenly saw a man raise a native axe and strike Lennel across the neck from behind. The poor man, he said, sank down without a murmur. He then ran back again into the forest, but was so hard pressed by the overwhelming numbers that he doubled back to the beach and swam for his life.

I was obliged to keep up a continuous and deadly fire for about ten minutes, to prevent the people from hauling up their canoes on the shore, which by now began to float off with the rising tide.

About two o'clock, Rangoon, one of the butterfly boys was seen to run out of the forest and push a canoe into

Digitized by Google

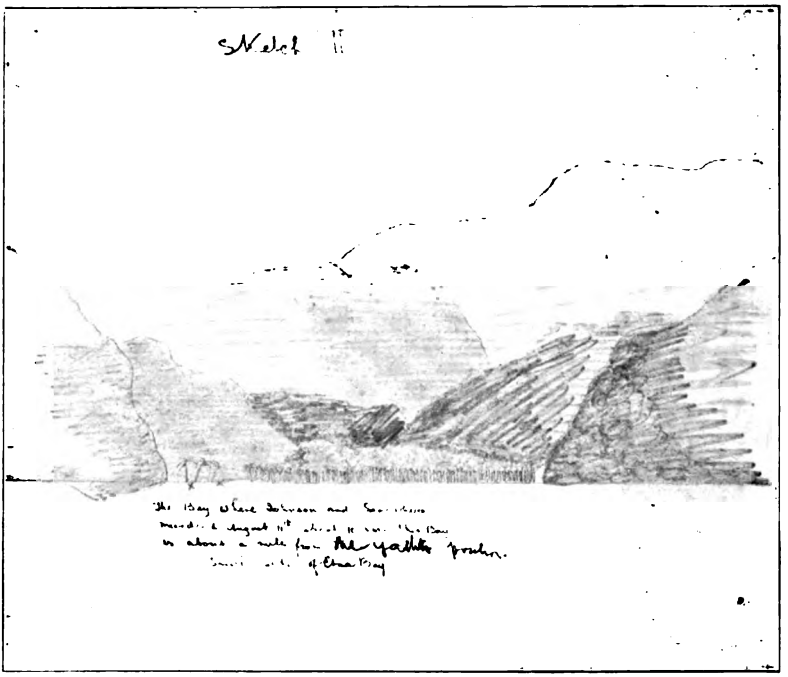
the water. He also reached the ship without any injury. Rangoon said that my men, who had taken him with the others in the boat in the morning, had been attacked by swarms of natives, but he had rushed off into the jungle, and thus escaped; that there were also hundreds of natives running backwards and forwards in the forest filled with excitement. About an hour later I saw two more of my men creeping through the mangroves a few hundred yards north of the village, and making for a canoe which was tied up close by, but the natives discovered them a few yards before they reached it, and attacked them in a most ferocious manner, only running away after I had fired several rounds of the Krupp gun over their heads. A few minutes later these two men were safely on board, and I could not but be amused at the plucky way in which one of them had stuck to his butterfly-net all the time, and especially when he told me that he could have reached the canoe much quicker had he not had it in his hand. They informed me that when the boat was attacked they ran away, as they were unarmed, but that Johnston, Sam, and Abdullah, the Macassar man, were all together.

The canoes which lined the beach opposite the village had by this time all floated off, as the tide had risen, and owing to the continuous fire I had been obliged to keep up to prevent the natives from securing them. I therefore now sent some men with axes, and in this way scuttled about forty, which were to be seen floating in the bay in all directions. This act evidently enraged the natives to such an extent that other canoes, overcrowded with people, sprang out of the mangroves from every point, and simultaneously made a desperate attack upon us.

These canoes, some sixty or seventy in number, containing in all about three hundred people, were kept at bay for a considerable time, and finding evidently that it

Digitized by Google

was an impossibility to secure the prize they so much coveted, they divided and disappeared, doing us but very little injury. The bay presented by this time a gruesome spectacle—the wreckage of destroyed canoes, bows and arrows, and many other articles of the enemy's fighting



THE SCENE OF THE MURDERS OF JOHNSTON AND SAM.

paraphernalia were to be seen floating in all directions. The noise of the tom-toms could be heard sending out their weird and dismal sounds from range to range, dusky objects could be seen skimming across a little open patch or creeping through the undergrowth near the water's edge all round us; and it reflects great credit upon the

Digitized by Google

remains of my small but plucky crew that so large a force on the shore was unable to approach and capture the ship.

There was not a breath of air to enable us to move, and the sun had nearly set, nevertheless immediately the tide turned I weighed anchor and dropped in the direction I had sent the boat in the morning, to endeavour to find out something of the three missing men. I fired a rifle at regular intervals on the way to enable them to know the ship's position, although I had but little hope of their being then alive.

At 10 P.M. we again let go the anchor, and about half an hour later I perceived, by the phosphorescent disturbance of the water, that something was coming towards the ship. In response to my inquiry I heard the faint word "Cowan" (Malay for friend), and knew at once it must be Abdullah, and very soon managed to get him on board. It appeared he had hidden in the jungle until long after dark, and then when he heard the chain running through the hawse-pipe he knew that the ship was again at anchor. So making his way some mile or two to windward along the coast he had cut a spar, taken off his clothes, and struck out for the centre of the bay, knowing that the strong current running at the time would very soon carry him down to the yacht. Had he started even fifty yards lower down the current would have swept him past the ship without ever reaching it, and we should never have seen or heard of him again. As it was he arrived on board in a terribly exhausted condition, with his feet all cut and bleeding, and his body scratched to pieces from the prickly undergrowth he had been obliged to penetrate, as the natives had so hotly pursued him, the most persistent being a man and a boy, both of whom he had killed with his kris.

My worst fears were now realised, for he told me

Digitized by Google

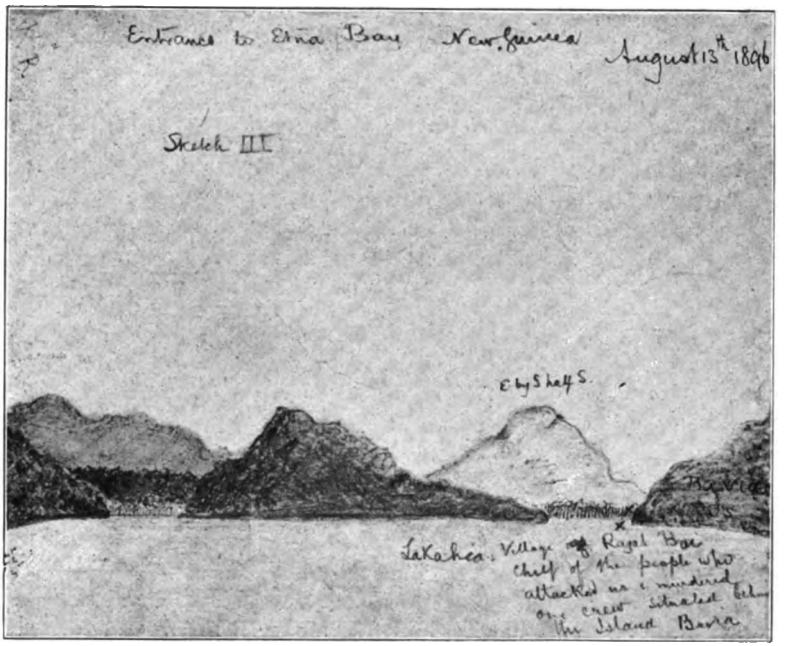
Johnston and Sam were both dead. On landing in the morning, he told us, the boat had been hauled up on the beach, and they had all sat under a cocoanut tree. Suddenly they were surprised by some hundred natives rushing out of the forest and attacking them, whereupon they made a bolt for their rifles, which they had foolishly left in the boat, when others in canoes attacked them from the sea. He just had time to see that Sam had been cut in the back and pierced with arrows, and poor Johnston, my boatswain, had literally been pierced through and through, when he ran off to save himself.

By eleven o'clock that night by the light of their fires I could see that the village was full of natives, and from the noise of their drums and tom-toms, and from an observation one of the hunters had made on the shore, I knew only too well the nature of their horrible and repulsive festivity. They had killed three of my men, had captured five rifles and my boat, and I was powerless to revenge these dastardly murders. All through that night and many succeeding ones I never left the deck, for on several occasions these natives, who were the boldest and most ferocious I had ever seen, made several desperate attempts to capture the vessel, and I am confident that if it had not been for the quick-firing Krupp, the yacht would have passed into other hands, and this book never have been written.

On the 15th of August we had still not a breath of air, but at daylight, the tide being with us, I weighed anchor and drifted slowly down the bay. I picked up one of my butterfly boxes floating down and saw hundreds of arrows and spears, &c., also about a dozen more canoes, which had evidently floated away in the night, as the natives had been too frightened to show themselves on the beach to make them fast. About midday the tide turning, I was obliged to let go the anchor, as there was still no breath

Digitized by Google

in the heavens. I shortly afterwards perceived canoe after canoe full of natives creeping up under the mangroves after me, but a few well-directed shots at those in the lead quickly caused the others to turn and paddle back again. From sundown I remained on deck throughout the night, straining my eyes at every movement in the



THE HOME OF MY WOULD-BE MURDERERS.

water and my ears at the slightest possible sound, and several times during the small hours of the morning the slight bump against the ship's stern caused me anxiously to peer over the taffrail, only to find that it was one of the canoes I had captured, but owing to its particularly clever design and carving I had not destroyed. I would not allow one single light of any description, as it might

Digitized by Google

have been a guide to our whereabouts for our would-be murderers, and so, as the night was dark as pitch, I was obliged to grope my way up and down.

At daylight I got under way again with the tide, followed, as I could see, but at safer distance, by hundreds of natives, not only in canoes, but creeping along the mangroves of the shore. I could every now and then both see and hear them. On this day we entered the narrowest portion of the bay, being only a hundred yards or so wide from shore to shore. Here the tide was much stronger, and we were thus enabled to travel a considerable distance, anchoring at the waterfall nearly at the entrance.

Here we caught sight of two canoes coming from the opposite direction altogether, and presuming they knew nothing of the fight, I hailed them, when they came within speaking distance. They flew the Dutch flag, and dipped it three times to me. They said they had come from Kjomera Bay to buy yams and sago from the people of Lahabia, whose chief, the Rajah Bai, was on board. This chief was the son of the old man who had been carried on board some days before, and was the head man of the very people who had fought us, but whether he knew anything about the matter I could not ascertain, as he had remained at his village at the entrance of the bay, and had not followed us up with the rest of his people on our arrival the week before. At any rate he was their chief, and I considered that I should be thoroughly justified in making him my prisoner.

I enticed the canoes nearer and nearer until they were alongside, and after producing an arrack bottle, which he evidently recognised from his dealings with the Burgis and Arabs, he consented to come on board and was followed by about twenty men. I then told him through Abdullah, who spoke a little of his dialect, that his people had

Digitized by Google

murdered three of my men and had stolen my boat and five guns, so that I intended to keep him as a prisoner. Before he had been told half the sentence he made a bolt for the side; but I was too quick for him, and he found himself handcuffed and tied to the mast in a far shorter space of time than it requires to write the account of it. Meanwhile his friends had deserted him and were swimming vigorously towards the canoes, which had been paddled off at the first intimation of trouble. I told him that he must tell his people in the canoes that I gave them three days in which to go and fetch my boat and my guns; at the end of that time, if they were not forthcoming, I should kill him. But notwithstanding his requests to them to do as I bid, they paddled off as fast as possible in an entirely opposite direction. I now held a consultation as to the best course to adopt, and after turning the matter well over in my mind, I decided to let him go on his undertaking to return to me as quickly as possible with my property—this promise I set little or no value upon, but I felt obliged to make him guarantee something as an excuse for setting him at liberty. My true reason, however, was that the Dutch Government would have undoubtedly sent me off to Macassar to attend his trial, and I could ill afford the many months I should have to remain there before the law was carried into effect. I learned afterwards from the Controlleur of Kei that I had acted very wisely by so doing, and had saved myself a lot of trouble and time. Calling back one of the canoes by telling them that their chief was free to go, they returned within a hundred yards of the ship, but no power of persuasion or assurances could induce them to come any nearer. I therefore permitted the chief to get into the canoe I was towing astern, and payed out rope to enable him to reach his own people, and had I not covered

Digitized by Google

him several times with a rifle the old scoundrel would have cut the painter and made off, canoe as well. The next tide took us out of the bay, and very soon afterwards we caught the fine, steady wind of the south-east monsoon.

It was with a sense of exquisite relief that I was now enabled for the first time for many days to go below and sleep in safety, and the strain and anxiety which I had experienced the last week can never, if I live to be a hundred, be forgotten.

Two days later the beautiful forests of the Kei Islands hove in sight, and before sunset, with an immense feeling of pleasure, I once more came to anchor off the hospitable little town of Toeal, where I was to leave my hunters and whither I had come to make my statement and complaint to the Dutch Government, and to try and obtain one or two Malay sailors to replace my poor murdered men, to help us down to North Australia. The Controlleur showed his great kindness again by assisting me in my search; but we were only able to obtain one man who was willing to leave the country.

On turning up the records of occurrences in his districts, the Controlleur showed me the entry respecting an attack made upon a steamer in Etna Bay, in 1889, where the captain, who had gone ashore with two of his officers, had been savagely attacked by the natives of Lahabia and murdered, and the natives had afterwards made a desperate attempt to seize the ship. Some time later I learned that another writer, speaking of this very village, stated it to be dangerous. To quote what he says: "This part of New Guinea is inhabited by the most bloodthirsty and treacherous tribes. It is in these districts that the commanders and portions of the crews of many of the early discovery ships were murdered, and scarcely a year now passes but that some lives are lost." Again the same writer states, when speaking

Digitized by Google

of Lahabia in Etna Bay: "In the very same village four years before more than fifty Goramese were murdered" (these people from the island of Goram, as well as Arabs and Ceramese, are in the habit of visiting annually this part of New Guinea to trade with the natives), "and as these savages obtain an immense booty in the praus and all their appurtenances it is to be feared that such attacks will continue to be made at intervals as long as traders visit the same spots and attempt no retaliation. Punishment could only be inflicted on these people by very arbitrary measures, such as by obtaining possession of some of the chiefs by stratagem and rendering them responsible for the capture of the murderers at the peril of their own heads. But anything of this kind would be quite contrary to the system adopted by the Dutch Government in its dealings with natives." For my own part, I must say I do not consider it a good plan to distribute, as they do, the flag of their country haphazard to all the natives with whom they come in contact, and in my opinion it would be far wiser were they first to obtain some knowledge of their character and disposition before placing in their hands such a token of civilisation, which, as the candle lures the moth, has drawn so many innocent people to destruction. I may also say that I have since been in communication with the Foreign Office, and have made a strong appeal to the Netherlands Government, but whether or no I shall ever receive any redress remains yet to be seen.

I had some few days to wait at Toeal before the arrival of the steamer from Singapore, which might possibly bring me some letters. The place presented a very different aspect to what it did some few months ago; the scarcity of rain was the cause of the scorched up appearance of everything now; the grass, so green when I left in May, was nowhere to be seen; the cattle of the

Digitized by Google

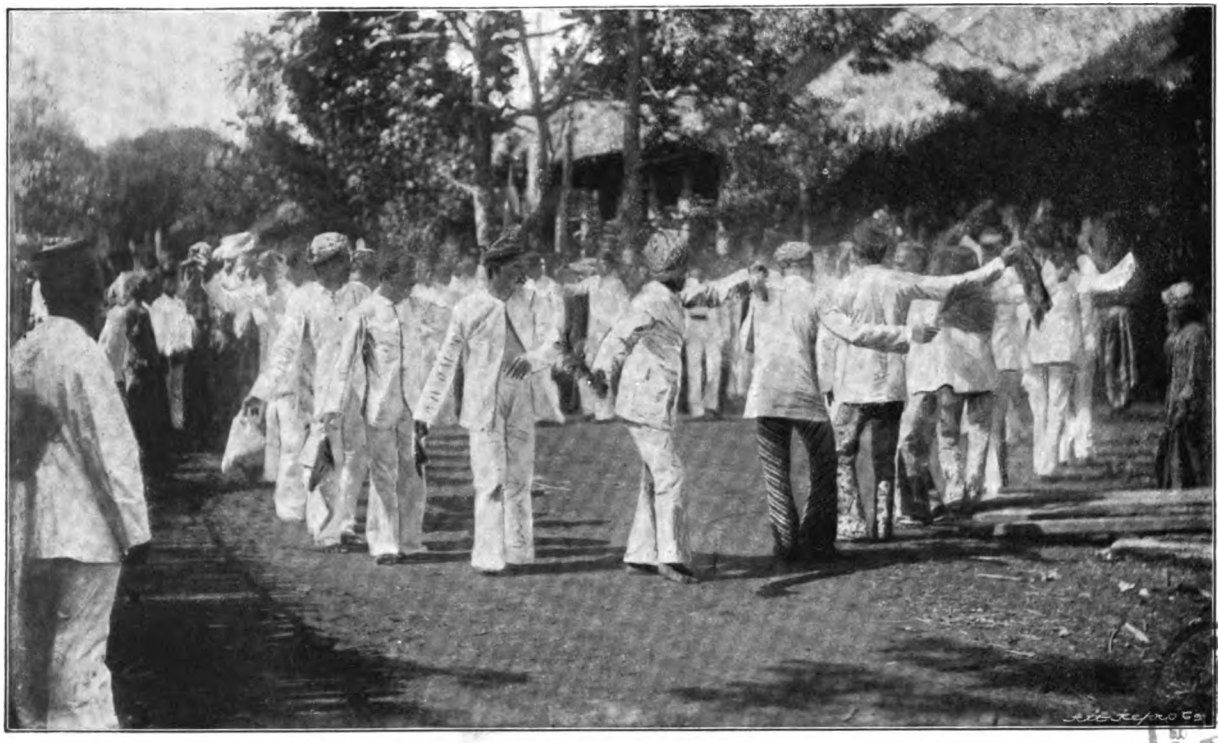
Controlleur, so fat and in such excellent condition before, were now dragging themselves from tree to tree in their endeavours to find the wherewithal to keep themselves alive. I sent out some men, and also went myself into the forest to see what I could find; but we all returned empty-handed, as this terrible dry season seemed to have destroyed every living creature; there was nothing therefore but to wait as patiently as possible for the arrival of the steamer.

The 31st of August being the birthday of the Queen of Holland, the whole town was clothed in its holiday raiment of red, white, and blue; and it struck me at the time as being so extremely strange that, although within a couple of days' travel from tribes of wild and savage cannibals who know absolutely nothing of the civilised world, these people should be celebrating the anniversary of the birth of a young queen so many thousand miles away on the other side of the globe. Guns were fired continually from daylight to dark—squibs, crackers, and rockets were being let off indiscriminately from every house. The natives amused us by swimming, racing in canoes, and various other sports, for prizes of tobacco, cloths, and even money, ending up the day with dancing and other festivities.

It is the great ambition of every native to obtain from the Chinamen a few crackers or squibs, and he is quite satisfied to go away by himself and let them off for his own amusement, a little fizzing, a very occasional small report, the flare up of half-dampened powder, and all is over; but he is quite satisfied, and dances and rolls on the ground for joy.

On September 10th, the Dutch mail having arrived the day previously, I started for Port Darwin, which is situated on the north-east of Australia, and where I was obliged to go, being so short-handed. It would have

Digitized by Google

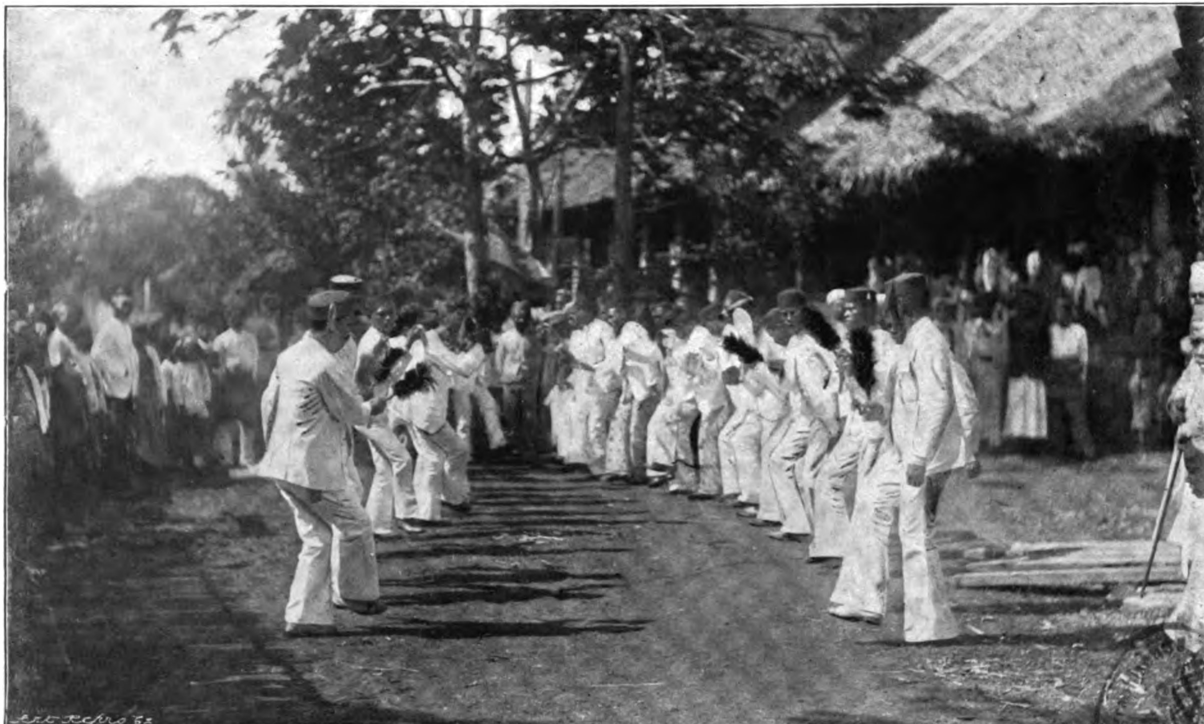


A MALAY DANCE.

Amt-Bibliothek-Hydrog. H-K.u.k. Kriegs Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A DANCE IN WHICH NONE BUT THOSE OF THE HIGHER CASTE ARE PERMITTED TO TAKE PART.

k.u.k. Kriegs Marine-Bibliothek-Hydrogr.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

been impossible during the south-east monsoon season to beat all the way to Torres Straits, where I desired to go on my way to British New Guinea, with so few sailors, and I calculated that at Port Darwin I should be able to obtain the requisite number of hands.

On the way out of Tocal Harbour we were fortunate to hook three enormous king-fish, each weighing fully thirty pounds, and were thus provided with fresh fish for the voyage.

A fine, steady breeze blowing from the south-east brought us, in four days, to Melville Island, off the coast of Australia, and a day or so afterwards we ran into Port Darwin, or Palmerston, as the town is called. The only sailors I found here were some very inferior and drunken Manila natives, but as it was a case of those or none, I was compelled to engage two. I then sent the yacht on to Thursday Island, in the Torres Strait, remaining behind myself, as I intended to wait for the China mail from Hong Kong, in which I could take passage for Thursday Island, and in the meantime benefit by the change on shore.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

THE HARBOUR AT PORT DARWIN—THE CABLE COMPANY'S HEAD-QUARTERS — THE TERMINUS OF THE TRANS-CONTINENTAL RAILWAY—CHINATOWN—I TAKE UP MY QUARTERS AT THE RESIDENCY—A CORROBOREE—AN ABORIGINAL'S CAMP—PORT DARWIN AS AN IMPORTANT SEAPORT — ARRIVAL AT THURSDAY ISLAND — THE PEARL FISHERY — NUMBERS OF JAPANESE — THE ARRIVAL OF THE YACHT—I DEPART FOR NEW GUINEA —YULE ISLAND—OPPOSITION MISSIONS—PORT MORESBY—I WATCH A WOMAN BEING TATOOED—THE "MERRIE ENGLAND"—VOYAGE TO SAMARAI—MISSION STATION AT KWATO—THE ONLY STONE CHURCH IN NEW GUINEA—THE NATIVES—I LOSE MY FAVOURITE DOG—DEPARTURE FOR NEW BRITAIN.

THE harbour at Port Darwin is situated in a very sheltered position behind the town of Palmerston. The rise and fall are very considerable—some eighteen to twenty feet. The small pier on which the railway runs is very well constructed, but at the time of my arrival a new one was in course of contemplation. The town itself is of some importance on account of its being the head-quarters of the British Atlantic Cable Company, this being the place where telegraphic communication with Australia commences. It is prettily situated on a peninsula overlooking the harbour on one side and the ocean on the other, and may therefore be considered in all respects very healthy.

Digitized by Google

It possesses a fairly good town-hall, post-office, library, and excellent Government buildings. The site of the Government Residency is an exceptionally well-chosen one, commanding, as it does, an excellent view of town and harbour. Here also is the terminus of the great Trans-continental Railway, an undertaking which has never yet been completed, although some hundreds of thousands of pounds have been spent upon it. China-town, where live by far the greater number of the population, is in a hollow rather below the European quarter, and the great stores and warehouses to be seen here remind one that, although the Britisher may be dreaming away his dreary existence beneath the scorching heat of the tropical sun, the Chinaman, at least, is extending his trade and pushing his way inch by inch forward here as in every other town where he establishes himself.

At the kind invitation of the Government Resident, His Honour Judge Dashwood, I took up my abode at the Residency, and during the time I was obliged to remain here, pending the arrival of the steamer, received many kind attentions and much hospitality at his hands. On one occasion, at his request, the aborigines collected together for many miles round to exhibit their native dance or corroboree, in which some eighty or a hundred men took part. Dressing themselves in leaves, and by the use of paint, ochre, &c., covering themselves with fantastic designs, they commenced their weird gyrations before me, and around a huge bonfire, which had been lighted in the open space selected for the purpose. This entertainment, which commenced at about nine in the evening, was carried on all through the night. Sometimes their dance would be accompanied by a low and melancholy chanting sound, and at others by terrible shouts and yells as of men rushing on to victory. Sometimes their motions

Digitized by Google

would betray their various passions in love, which to the European eye appeared to be very lewd and disgusting. At other times they would go through the evolutions of war, imitating an attack or defence with such perfect mimicry that one could hardly believe that it was anything but one tribe in combat against another.

Amongst the many and beautiful drives for which the Resident took me during my visit was one to the blacks' camp, a few miles up the coast, where there were some two or three hundred natives congregated together. These people, who appear to be about the lowest class of any natives, build no houses whatever, but live upon the seashore in small holes dug out in the sand. They are filthy in the extreme, living a wandering life, picking up scraps here and there, but never doing any work. The time cannot be far distant when this race of people, like the aborigines of Tasmania, will have entirely disappeared from the face of the earth.

The Residency itself is most substantially built of stone, found in the district. It has some very fine reception-rooms, and a most delightful verandah under glass, completely encircling the building. The interior decorations have been thoughtfully carried out, and the artistically hand-painted ceilings and walls all go to show the good taste of the Resident. Prettily laid-out grounds and a very first-rate asphalte tennis-court complete the home chosen by her Majesty's South Australian Government for the man whom they appoint to guard the interests of their people in this far-away corner of Australia.

It struck me as being rather strange that Port Darwin, which is the nearest point of Australia to Western civilisation, and in a direct line from China and India, both of those countries being reached from here by smooth water all the way, should not have become, long

Digitized by Google

ere this, a town of greater magnitude. The excellent land of this northern territory, the extensive gold-mines in the district, and the abundance of water should in my opinion have gone a long way to enhance its value as a shipping port, and I believe that when the time arrives, as surely it must, when coloured labour is allowed, this colony will bid fair to be a very dangerous rival to its sisters—Victoria and New South Wales.

On the arrival of the China Steam Navigation Company's boat, I took my departure for Thursday Island, but I cannot bid adieu to this charming town without expressing my sincerest gratitude for all the exceptional hospitality I received at the hands of the Government Resident. A more delightful host it would be impossible to find, and no trouble was too great where the comfort of his guest was concerned.

After a passage of three days we came to anchor at Thursday Island, where is situated the head-quarters of the great pearl fishery of Australia. The hundreds of pearling luggers, surrounded by their supply schooners, are to be seen everywhere, but the picture here is of a far different nature to the pretty town we have just left. The want of foliage and green of every description is very obvious. A few offices and stores in the midst of a number of dilapidated shanties and billiard saloons mark the contrast, and I thoroughly believe that a few years hence, when the pearling industry is exhausted, Thursday Island will be given up to the half-caste Manila men and Japanese who infest the place. My yacht had not arrived, and I was therefore obliged to take up my quarters in an hotel, with nothing to do but to sit down and wait patiently.

The firm who were acting as my agents had established a branch of their business here, and I was therefore able to obtain fresh stores, of which I was beginning to become

Digitized by Google

sadly in need, without being obliged to write to Melbourne or Sydney for them. On the arrival of the yacht, which had been unfortunate in meeting with many calms, delaying her passage, I at once set about getting my things on board, making a few repairs that were necessary and engaging a new crew. This finished, I set sail for Port Moresby, where the seat of government is situated in British New Guinea. Experiencing very wet weather and head winds, our passage to Yule Island extended longer than it would have done otherwise. This was the first point we made on the coast of British New Guinea. The island is two miles broad and four in length, and contains numerous peaks, the highest of which is about 600 feet.

Sailing down the straits between the island and the mainland we very soon came upon the Mission Station of the London Missionary Society, and on the small island named Lolo, exactly facing it and about one mile and a half distant, I could see the many houses, schools, and church of the French Catholic Mission which is established there. It appears to me rather foolish that these two missions, both excellent in their own way, should have chosen stations in such close proximity, to teach religions which differ so much in form one from the other. An amusing cartoon which has lately appeared in the *Sydney Bulletin*, portraying a native in the act of being dragged by the legs by the missionaries on either side, goes a long way to show that there should be no divided opinions in the teachings of our Lord.

The Bishop of Navarre, who presides over this Roman Catholic Mission, I met whilst at Thursday Island, whither he had gone on a visit. Knowing that I was on my way to New Britain he requested me to take a letter to his old friend Bishop Coupé, to whom he had not written for years, and with whom he was very desirous of communicating.

Digitized by Google

This letter I had in my possession for some considerable time, and when at last I had again the pleasure of meeting Bishop Coupé, I handed it to him, but to his intense disappointment he discovered that he was reading a communication to some individual in Paris, as the Bishop of Navarre had placed the wrong letter in his envelope. Of course to those living at home a mistake of this kind is thought little or nothing of, as it can be so easily rectified,

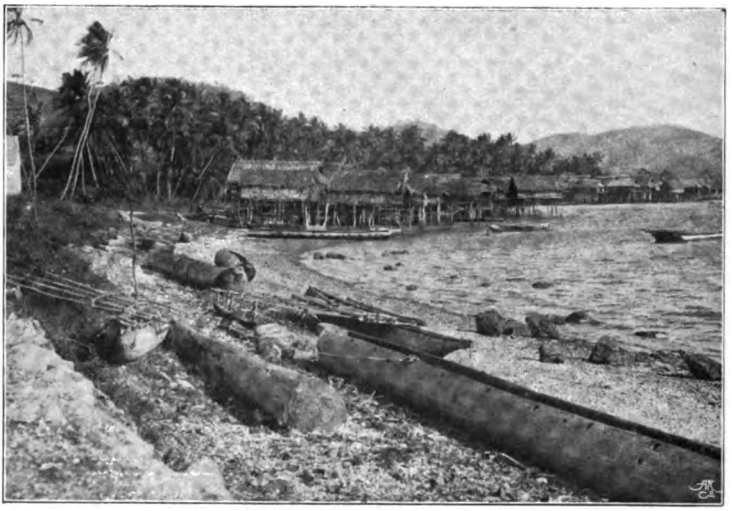
THE NATIVES BRING ME VEGETABLES, ETC., TO BUY.

but to those living in the Far East, where distances are so great and posts so seldom—on occasions many months between each—it was, to say the least of it, extremely unfortunate that such a misfortune should have occurred.

Sailing down the coast with all our canvas spread, it was not long before we hove Port Moresby in sight; and shortly afterwards, just as the sun was sinking beneath the horizon, came to anchor in Fairfax Harbour, when we were imme-

Digitized by Google

diately boarded by a young Englishman, who held the appointment, amongst numerous others, of Custom House officer, for it could not possibly be an English port, however small, without a Customs Department. I was told that a great many improvements had been effected here, although at the time of my visit it would be hard to find a more dreary and dried-up looking spot anywhere in the South Pacific. Unfortunately Sir William MacGregor was absent in the



PORT MORESBY.

interior, on one of those expeditions which he so often undertakes, to acquaint the natives with the manners and customs of the white man, to propagate civilisation, and for which he is so eminently renowned. It was my great wish to meet him, as I entertained an enormous respect for the capable manner he has carried on the government of this country for so many years past, and my disappointment at finding him away was very great indeed. How-

Digitized by Google

ever, the gentleman who was acting for him did everything he could to make my short visit a pleasant one, showing me over the head station and native trading institution which is established here, the principal native village in the harbour, and all the other places of interest in the bay.

A NATIVE GIRL.

The fact of its being the dry season on the occasion of my visit perhaps accounts for the half-starved and miserably thin appearance of the natives, whose only dress consisted of a small piece of cord round the waist of the men, and a short skirt, manufactured of banana leaves

Digitized by Google

strung together, about fifteen inches in length, for the women. Ulcers and abscesses, skin diseases and elephantiasis seemed very prevalent amongst them. Strolling at the back of the village, the houses of which are built out on piles in the water, I observed many women in the act

A VILLAGE BELLE.

of being tattooed, for it is the custom to tattoo from head to foot every female. Commencing from infancy, they are marked with strange designs and figures, until, when they are grown up, there is no space left for more.

At one house, where I could see a woman stretched on

Digitized by Google

the ground undergoing the somewhat painful operation, I stepped in to watch the *modus operandi*. Laid flat on her back, and with several people on either side to hold her still, she was undergoing the torture, for I can call it by no other word, of having circular and zigzag lines

THREE SISTERS.

scored round her breasts. A woman kneeling beside her, with a small piece of stick, some eight inches in length, attached to the point of which, and at right angles to it, was a long thorn, resembling somewhat a sharp darning-needle, was the operator, and after sketching the requisite

Digitized by Google

design upon the body of the victim in charcoal and some black and sticky substance obtained from the bark of a certain tree, with another small and weighted stick in the other hand, she commenced striking the implement which she had placed upon the sketched-out portion until she had pricked sufficiently that part she was desirous of tattooing, and blood was flowing copiously.

Further on past the village Sir William MacGregor has caused water pipes to be laid, so that not only have the natives a fresh water supply brought to them, but ships can fill their tanks without trouble, and it is also utilised for irrigating the ground for some considerable distance, thus enabling the natives to have a good supply of vegetables in the driest season; although I am sorely afraid that the indolent disposition of the people will never allow them to have anything in the way of food except that which grows itself and is all but placed in their mouths.

Mr. Musgrave, the Government Secretary, very kindly offered me a passage as far as Samarai on the Government steam yacht *Merrie England*, and at the same time promised she should tow the yacht behind her. Therefore, after remaining here for forty-eight hours, during which time my water tanks were replenished, I went on board the *Merrie England* and started. The coast after leaving Port Moresby assumes a far more regular aspect than I had as yet experienced. A reef which runs for many miles parallel to the coast has caused the destruction of many vessels at different times.

Threading our way through the numerous coral patches, which are to be traced by the discoloured water, in this vicinity, we quickly made the open sea, but soon afterwards a strong wind and heavy sea rising, we were obliged to let go the yacht's hawser, as my captain signalled there was too much strain upon her. After communicating

Digitized by Google

with him to come on as quickly as possible to Samarai we steamed ahead, and shortly afterwards she was lost sight of below the horizon.

Passing the Owen Stanley range to the eastward of the Papuan Gulf, I could see quite plainly Mount Victoria on account of its great height—13,200 feet. This is the highest peak in the range. Numerous villages were seen all along the coast, and cocoanut trees in great

A GROUP OF NATIVES.

profusion were observed even high up in the mountains, but I was informed that the natives were very treacherous, and bore a bad character, notwithstanding the fact that Sir William MacGregor, with an iron though kindly hand, has ruled the country for so long. Owing to the severity of the weather and the heavy head sea the passage took longer than we expected, and it was not until the morning of the fourth day that we passed the island

Digitized by Google

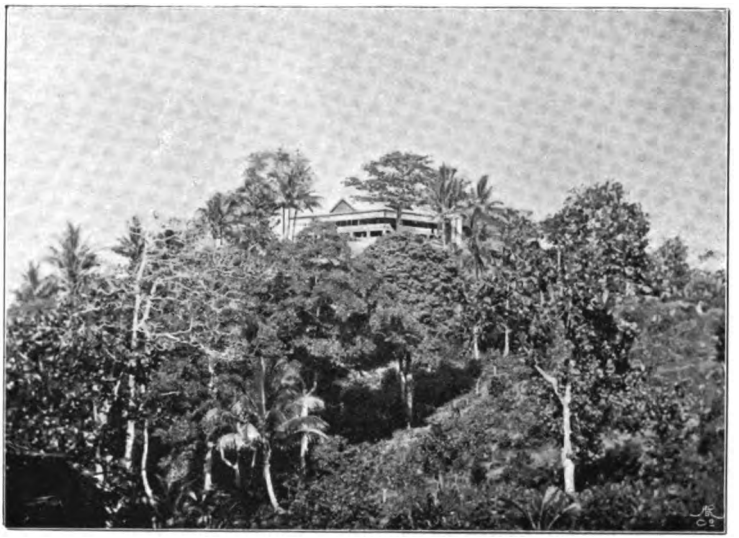
of Kwato, and anchored opposite the houses of Samarai some half an hour later.

Samarai, or Dinner Island, as it is called, is flat, with the exception of a small hill on the eastern side. It is the seat of the Government for the eastern portions of New Guinea, and when I arrived there was a judge from Queensland residing there to try the numerous small native cases. The whole island has been planted with cocoanut trees, and that which at one time was a huge swamp in the centre of the island has now been filled up and converted into a cricket ground, and a place of recreation for the one or two Europeans whose occupations oblige them to remain here. Pineapples seem to grow in great quantities, and the Government buildings, the one or two stores, and the beautiful avenue leading to the judge's residence, and the many and various-coloured crotons growing by the wayside, make Samarai as habitable as possible. About five hundred tons of coal are stored here for the use of her Majesty's ships. The island was once the property of the London Missionary Society, having been bought by them from the natives, but was given up to the Government, as being more suitable, in exchange for the island of Kwato, on which they are now established. Mr. Abel, the missionary in charge of the station, paid me a visit, and on learning that my yacht was expected in the course of a few days persuaded me to come on shore and live with him until she came. Availing myself of his kindness, and thanking the captain and officers of the *Merrie England* for all their hospitality, I was pulled over to this small island, which is only about three-quarters of a mile in length and half a mile in width, and high up in the centre of which is situated the missionary's house.

Mrs. Abel received me with much cordiality, and the week I spent with them passed only too quickly. The

Digitized by Google

mission house is large and very well built; furnished with exquisite taste, it is replete with every comfort, and I could hardly believe, after gazing round the prettily arranged drawing-room, that the land I saw before me contained all the malarious swamps and unknown forests of New Guinea. Mrs. Abel, whose duty it is to superintend the training of the numerous native children they have adopted, held a school every morning, and it is truly wonderful what an



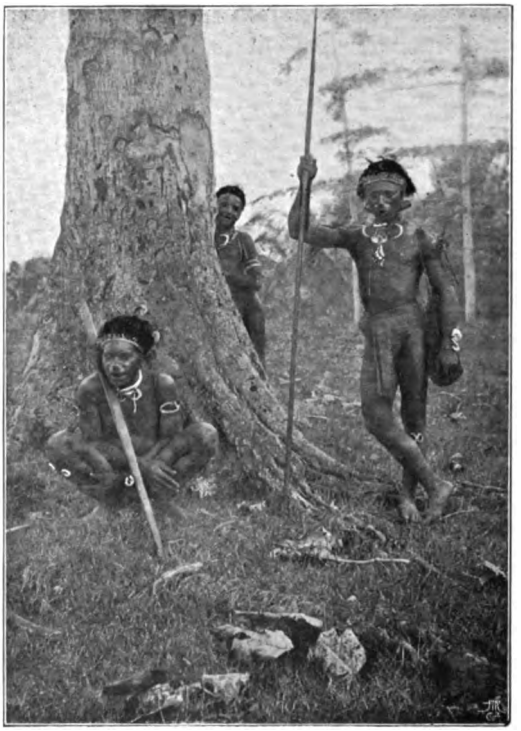
KWATO MISSION HOUSE.

amount of intelligence these small savages display even after a few weeks of tuition. In the afternoon a class for needlework takes place, and the expert and dexterous fingers of these young people again prove that they have been sent into the world for some purpose.

At the time of my visit Mr. Abel was in the act of building a stone church, the first ever erected in New Guinea, with no other help than the few native children

Digitized by Google

who carried up the lime and stone from the beach below, and the few Papuans who collected the material and burned the lime for him. This was all the more wonderful as there is not to be found a square yard of level ground on the whole island, and the task of levelling the requisite



NATIVES.

portion, where rock and boulders had to be contended with, seemed to me to be almost a herculean one.

Taking a stroll one evening on the island of Rogeai, which is separated from Kwato by a very deep channel some two hundred yards in width, I passed through

Digitized by Google

numerous villages, thickly populated with natives, the women in many instances being hard at work making nets, but the men as a rule lying sleeping or chattering together. A great many pigs were seen, also chickens, but everywhere the pariah dog so common amongst all the islands of the South Pacific. The natives, who were friendly, crowded round me and asked innumerable questions. Their frizzy hair, which grows to an enormous extent all over the head, is kept from altogether becoming a tangled mass by a pronged bamboo comb, which every now and then they pass through it. Like the natives on the mainland, they wear little or no clothing, and are for ever busy chewing the betel nut and lime. The women—if possible more hideous to look upon than the men—are tattooed from head to foot, and the custom of besmearing their faces and heads with a black, sticky substance resembling pitch during their time of mourning is practised here. Their weapons consisted of bows, arrows, and spears, and I saw many evidences of their dealings with the white men in the ownership of knives and tomahawks.

At night could be heard far away in the forest weird sounds from their tom-toms and drums, wailings and shouting, which told us that their lewd dances and other disgusting orgies were taking place.

One evening a cry of "Sail O!" resounded throughout the island from every mouth that could give tongue, a custom which is universal, wherever a white man resides in these parts, on sighting a ship, and on running round the verandah I perceived in the far distance the white sails glistening in the evening sun of my little vessel, and running up a signal from the flagstaff of the Mission, I very soon acquainted the captain with my whereabouts, and ere the last glimmer of daylight had departed she was riding at anchor by Kwato Harbour.

The one and only regret I have in my memory of the

Digitized by Google

visit I paid here was the loss of my little fox-terrier "Spot," who had been such a companion on the voyage and such a safe guard to the ship. His hatred for any one black was unbounded, and many times I have split with laughter on seeing him clear the deck of many natives by causing them to jump overboard in their absolute terror of him, and on more than one occasion, when one has

A TYPICAL NEW GUINEA RESIDENCE.

taken a rather longer time to get over the side, he has left the impression of his teeth in some poor man's calf. I took him on shore one evening for a run, and so great appeared his delight at being on *terra firma* that he rushed madly about all over the island terrorising the natives and causing us much amusement by his antics. Presently I lost sight of him, and although I called and searched the whole island from end to end I could not

Digitized by Google

find him, and whether he was snapped up by an alligator on the beach, or whether he attempted to swim to the yacht and was taken by a shark, I never knew. But that was the last I ever saw of him, and his disappearance must thus remain for ever a mystery.

I cannot close this chapter without expressing the very highest feelings of regard I have for the way in which Mr. Abel is carrying out his work here. His perfect knowledge of the language of course brings him in very close contact with the natives, and he is thus enabled to dispel many of the superstitions so prevalent amongst them. His style of teaching, in my opinion, so much better than I have hitherto seen practised by Protestant missionaries, must without fail mark him sooner or later as a well-known figure in mission labour in New Guinea; and his love for athletic sports, the taste for which he is fast infusing into the minds of the natives, will one day cause him, I should say, to become the most popular teacher in the country. Bidding adieu to my kind and hospitable friends, I set sail for New Britain, calling at Samarai to get on board the few articles I had purchased in the store there.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

THE CHINA STRAITS—THE TROBRIAND ISLANDS—BEAUTIFUL NATIVE CARVINGS — EBONY — A NATIVE PEARL FISHERY—THE NATIVES OFFER ME TOMAHAWKS FOR SALE—THE DISCOVERY OF NEW IRELAND—ST. GEORGE'S CHANNEL—I ARRIVE IN BLANCHE BAY—I GIVE A CONJURING ENTERTAINMENT—THE DEVIL-DEVIL—DUKE OF YORK ISLANDS—MIOKO—THE GRAVES OF MURDERED EUROPEANS—NATIVE FESTIVITIES—THE DUK-DUK—I AM POISONED BY A FISH—A NARROW ESCAPE FROM DEATH—I AM LAID UP WITH FEVER—METHOD OF RECRUITING LABOUR—WOMEN MANUFACTURING NATIVE MONEY—LOCAL BUTTERFLIES — ABUNDANCE OF FISH—THE MIOKO TREE AS A LANDMARK.

PASSING through the China Straits, which separate the south-east coast of New Guinea from the island of Sariba, and which gained their name from the explorations of Captain Moresby, R.N., in 1873, when it was found that these straits would prove the most direct route to China from Australia, and successfully navigating the numerous coral patches I found there, I set my course towards the Trobriand Islands, the northernmost point of which lies in latitude 8° 27′ 40″ S., and longitude 151° 3′ 40″ E., and on the following day ran along the coast of North Island, one of the islands in the group. A great many natives came off in canoes, and offered for

Digitized by Google

sale many of their ornaments, and I was surprised to see how very much better they were made than those of the New Guinea people. Their weapons, spoons, and bowls were delicately carved in ebony, and they led me to believe that a great quantity of this wood was to be found there. Their hair was worn in ringlets hanging over their shoulders, and they appeared to be a far finer race of men than the inhabitants of the mainland. At first very shy, they very soon gained confidence, and crowding round the ship, were all very eager to trade.

There have been great numbers of pearls discovered here by the natives, and for which they have received from the white traders visiting them such an over-abundant supply of tomahawks that these tools were willingly offered me for a stick of tobacco each.

Having heard so much of the great power the chiefs exercise over the people in this group of islands, I was most anxious to find the mission station, which I was told was hereabouts, so that the missionary could show me through one of their villages, but unfortunately the natives, who could not speak any English, seemed quite unable to understand my desire, and although I anchored and sent my boat away the whole of one day to look for it, I was unable to discover where it was.

The canoes in which the natives surrounded the ship were of excellent design and most beautifully carved, being dug out from the solid trunk of a finely grained tree, partially decked over in the bows. Although I offered a considerable amount of trade, they could not be induced to part with one. The whole of these islands seem to be flat, but very thickly wooded with enormous trees, some of which were quite 150 feet high; and judging from the quantities of yams, taros, and other products brought to me for sale, the land must be of a most fertile nature.

Digitized by Google

Continuing my journey past Normandy Island, a large island in the south of the d'Entrecasteaux group, I shortly afterwards sighted Cape St. George, which lies at the extreme south of New Ireland, and where the settlers of the Marquis de Ré Expedition I have already described landed, and afterwards met with their untimely end.

New Ireland was discovered in the seventeenth century, and was, with New Britain, for considerably over a

TYPE OF NATIVE.

hundred years, considered to be a portion of the island of New Guinea, and this idea was not dispelled until the visit of Dampier in the eighteenth century, when it was found that the straits which bear his name divided New Guinea from it, and even another fifty years elapsed before New Ireland and New Britain were discovered by Carteret to be two distinct islands.

Beating up St. George's Channel against considerable head winds and currents, it was not until a week later I

Digitized by Google

perceived the houses at Herbertsoh, which, as I have already mentioned in the first part of this volume, is the seat of German Government in this archipelago.

After a short delay I sailed on to Ralum, and for the second time had the pleasure of meeting my old friends.

Here I found great improvements had been made; the plantations had been considerably extended for many miles into the interior, roads had been cut through the entire estate, and horses and carriages imported from Australia. Mrs. Kolbe had built herself a most palatial

Front View. *Side View.*

A NATIVE GIRL.

residence, and, in fact, everything had changed with the exception of their welcome, for they were as kind and hospitable to me as on the last occasion of my visit.

A few days after my arrival I promised the natives to show them some conjuring and sleight-of-hand tricks.

On the day fixed, from daylight in the morning natives flocked down from all parts of the interior and from many miles along the coast to witness the performance, and I was afterwards held in great awe and veneration by every one I came across. No matter how simple the

Digitized by Google

tricks the natives were open-mouthed in their wonder, and that day earned for me the title of "taboran" (devil) throughout the whole of New Britain, and without a doubt a hundred years hence the "taboran" who came in a ship and made mango trees grow before their eyes, and fire come out of his mouth, will be talked of as one of the wonders of their country, and I daresay with much exaggeration.

Time was getting short, and the object of my calling here, namely, to get hunters to go to the Admiralty Islands, was with great difficulty accomplished, and so in the hopes of getting one or two more I sailed over to Mioko, one of the smaller islands of the Duke of York group, and possessing a very well-sheltered harbour, having two entrances, capable of admitting vessels of any size.

This group of islands consists of thirteen in number, of which the Duke of York Island is the largest. The Island of Mioko has been chosen by a large German-Samoan company, as a copra and recruiting station, and is managed by a gentleman named Schultze. About a mile in length, and three-quarters in width, with its high land at one end gradually sloping down to the sea at the other, it is a most picturesque spot. The station itself is charmingly situated at the lower end of the island, and obtaining the direct sea breezes from all points of the compass, is considered one of the healthiest spots in the Bismarck archipelago. It is completely surrounded by cocoanut and orange trees, and has its magnificent natural harbour on the one side, and is protected from tidal waves and hurricanes on the other by a large reef running out to a considerable distance.

At the far end of the island I found a large, underground grotto, abounding with ferns. Here, until quite recently, natives who, according to their own confession, are

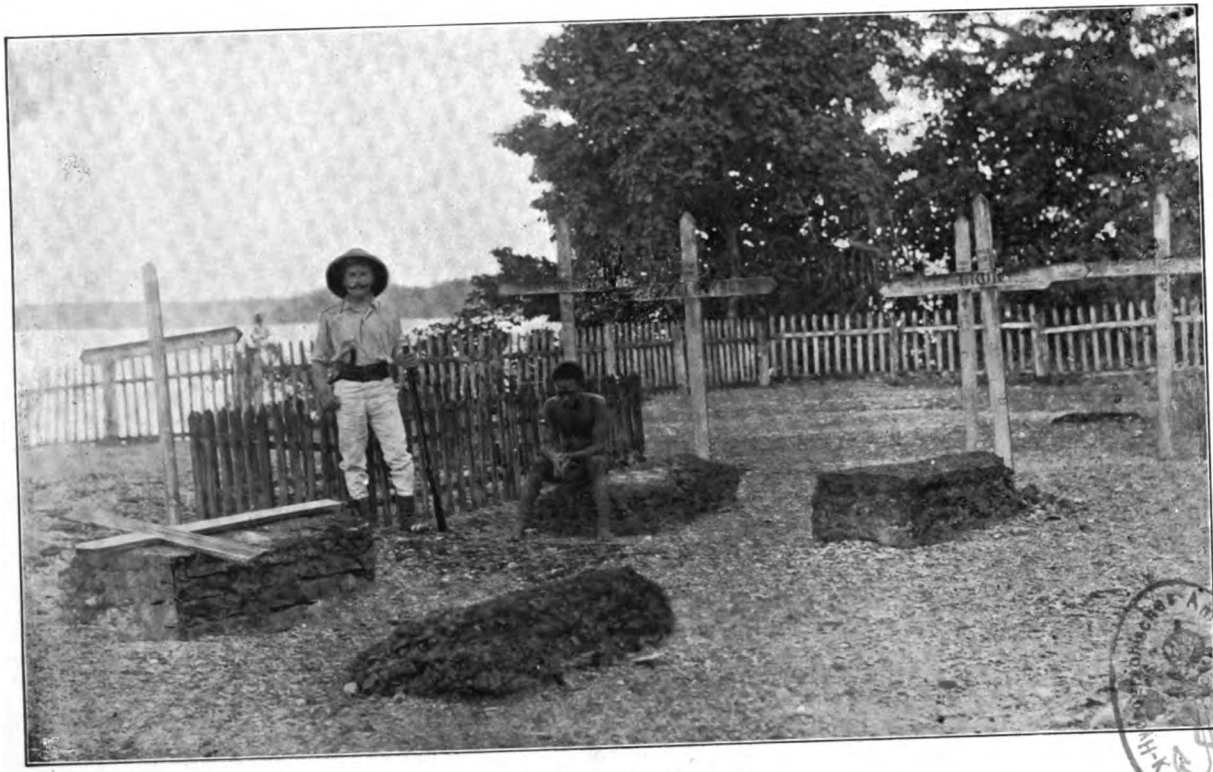
Digitized by Google

A CONJURING ENTERTAINMENT.

Digitized by Google

k.u.k. Hydrographisches Amt - Bibliothek - Marine

Digitized by Google



THE GRAVEYARD AT MIOKO.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

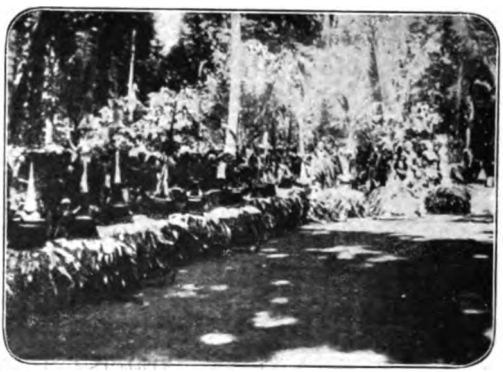
cannibals, held their man-eating festivities. A walk along the beach through a shady avenue of cocoanut trees, and I came upon a cemetery, a little enclosed patch well kept and fenced round with a neat bamboo rail. Here lie buried Dr. Kleinschmidt and his two assistants, Messrs. Schultze and Becker, who were sent out by Messrs. Godefroy and Sons, of Hamburg, to collect curios and natural history specimens. Whilst here, desiring to visit the mainland of New Britain, they attempted to engage natives to paddle them across. But as the Duke of York Islanders and those on the mainland of New Britain were then at war they refused to take them. With a little strategy they obtained the services of the people of Outuan, another of the islands in the harbour, but they also, on learning their destination, declined to take them and started for home. The Germans then followed them, and stupidly fired a gun to frighten them into compliance with their wishes, whereupon the natives turned and attacked them, spearing and tomahawking them to death. The chief of the island, Bokop, took no part whatever in this murder, and was afterwards influential in delivering up the perpetrators to the Government. There are several other graves, the names on them having been erased by time and weather, but they all belong to white men who have been murdered in this group.

During my visit a curious custom was being enacted. The Duk-Duk, for that is the name it goes by, is an interesting institution, originally emanating from this group of islands. Many hundreds of years ago it was invented by a celebrated chief here, as a form of native police. At the outset, men who had misbehaved themselves in the principal village, and were consequently debarred from getting food there, used to cover themselves with leaves, worked into weird and strange shapes,

Digitized by Google

and repair to neighbouring villages, and on their terrifying the people to such an extent, they willingly gave them food in order to get rid of them. This costume proved so successful in working upon the fears and superstitions of the natives that eventually the chiefs arrogated to themselves the right of clothing a kind of police in this manner, and any of their enemies were thus hunted down by the Duk-Duk who could and did kill any one with impunity.

Any woman looking upon the Duk-Duk was imme-



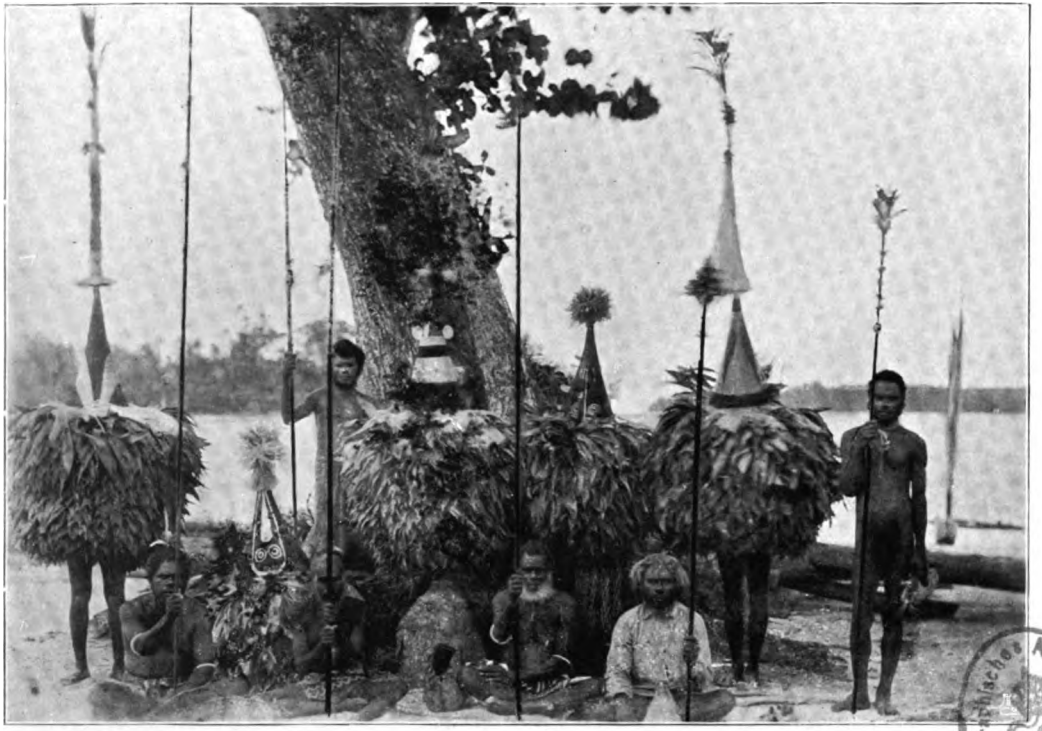
A GROUP OF THE DUK DUK.

diately put to death, and even down to the present day upon the faintest sign of the approach of this dreadful apparition the women all fly in terror and bury themselves in the densest jungle possible.

I was very fortunate to be here when the Duk-Duk was *en evidence*.

One morning the King of Outuan, who is quite the most important chief here, paid me a visit, accompanied by several men and women, whose bodies were very artistically painted and who were decorated with many coloured croton leaves and native flowers. He

Digitized by Google

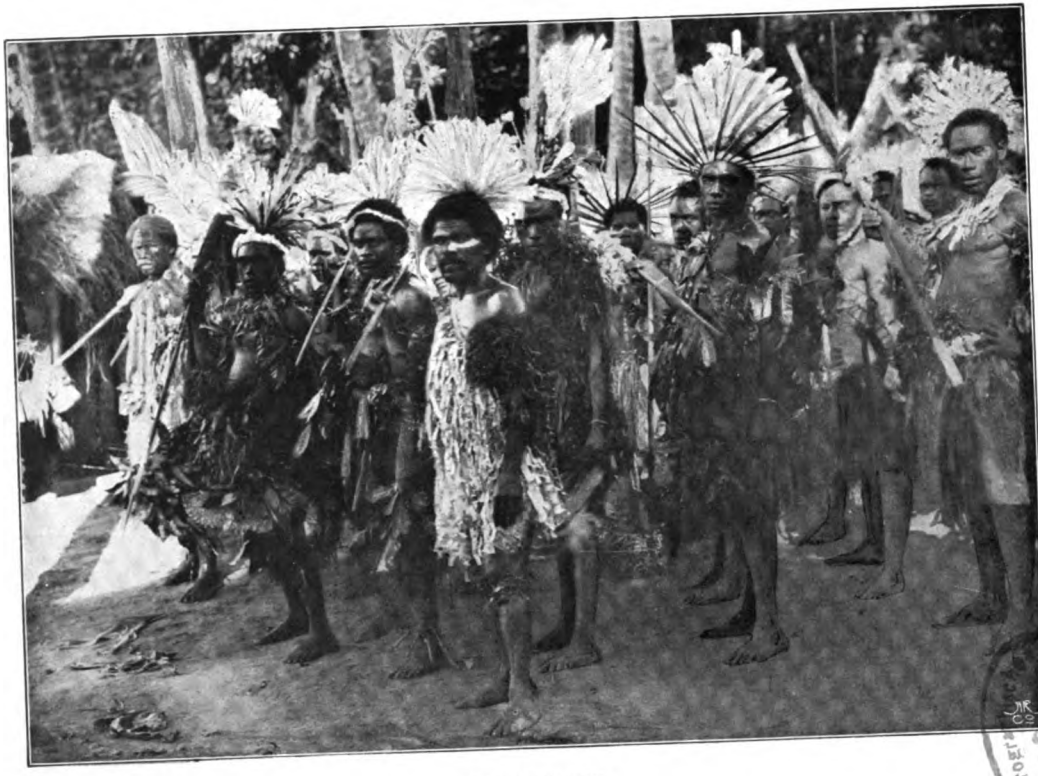


THE DUK DUK.

Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k.Kriegs-Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



NATIVE DANCE.

Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-K.u.k.Kriegs Marine-

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

came to exhibit his own native dance in honour of my presence. After performing various strange evolutions and singing many songs of love and war to the accompaniment of their native drums, they were with considerable difficulty persuaded to allow themselves to be photographed.

The king then received a few fathoms of dewarra and many sticks of tobacco as remuneration, and presenting me with a very handsome dancing spear, they all took their departure.

On one occasion a native brought me a small fish on his spear point, saying in pidjin English, "That fellar he savey too much, he ki-ki along o' me plenty, me die finish," meaning to say that the fish was an artful customer and if bitten by him I should die. Placing it in a bottle of spirit I unfortunately touched one of the spiky fins, whilst pressing in the cork. Immediately I felt an electric shock run up my arm and one drop of blood appeared on my finger. Rushing to the verandah I at once procured brandy and ammonia, in which I bathed my injured hand, but in an incredibly short space of time I became insensible, and had it not been for the timely arrival of a captain of a recruiting schooner then lying off the island I should probably never have recovered. The captain at once proceeded to administer brandy in enormous doses, with the result that after some time I recovered consciousness. He then walked me up and down, though feeling dead beat, for many hours, continually dosing me with brandy until the poison was conquered. I was, however, confined to my bed for ten days, a severe attack of fever supervening.

In spite of this unfortunate occurrence my collection here was very satisfactory, many new species being discovered. The captain of this recruiting ship would kindly sit by me during my sickness and spin many yarns in connection with his recruiting work.

Digitized by Google

The mode of procedure in thus obtaining the labour hands for the various plantations is as follows:—The ship arriving at the country where the captain is desirous of getting hands, keeps as near the shore as the reefs will allow. Boats are then lowered equipped with axes, tomahawks, coloured calicoes, pipes, tobacco, glass beads, and many other small articles likely to prove attractive to the eyes of the natives. They then pull ashore and go close to the beach, stern first, so as to be able to pull away at once in case of attack. This is, of course, a very dangerous undertaking, as the natives would in many instances kill the recruiter and crew, were they not deterred by the sight of so many rifles and revolvers. For every native who elects to go, for a period of never less than three years, which is understood, presents of tomahawks, calicoes, &c., are at once handed over to his relations, and when they have a sufficient number of men they are put on board a second boat and sent to the ship.

In this way, calling at many villages as they go along, occasionally in a very short time they get their full complement, when they at once start off for New Guinea or for wherever they are recruiting labour. The natives receive payment at the rate of about five marks per month, but as their wages are always paid in kind I am afraid they do not always receive the just amount. Each native is provided with a small metal disc, which is fastened round his neck, bearing a number corresponding to his name in a book kept for the purpose, but many times these discs either get lost or exchanged, and the natives themselves, forgetting even the very name of their own village, get landed on their return at the wrong place, and are consequently killed and eaten.

Strolling through a village one day with my gun in quest of some new species of ornithology, I perceived some women very busy manufacturing a native money

Digitized by Google

A NATIVE MARKET.

Digitized by Google

k.u.k. Hydrographisches Amt - Bibliothek - k.u.k. Kriegs-Marine

Digitized by Google

peculiar to these islands. Taking some small white or black shell they expertly chip it until it assumes the shape of a gun wad, and the size of a small glove button, but only half its thickness. A hole is then bored through the centre with a small piece of flint fixed in the end of a stick, resembling somewhat a Chinese drill. Thousands of these are thus made, and then strung upon a thin strip of rattan or cane and sold in lengths of twelve inches or so. By this means food is bought, articles exchanged, and debts paid from one village to another.

On another occasion, rambling along a native path with my butterfly-net, I came across and captured many hundreds of small butterflies, which were all crowding together in one spot only. This particular species I did not see anywhere else in the group. I afterwards found them to be new, and they have since been described. This is one instance of proof that these insects are very local.

Among other birds, I collected many pigeons, the most beautiful of which was a ground pigeon of metallic bronze, and apparently very common throughout these islands.

I got but little assistance from the natives, as they were one and all so infernally lazy, making their women do everything for them, except to eat and sleep.

There is a mission station situated in Port Hunter in the northern part of the larger island, but I did not visit it.

We obtained enormous supplies of fish here, which kept the ship going all the time she was in harbour, but owing to the extreme indolence of the people, vegetable produce was very scanty, and that, in a way, no doubt accounts for the number of ulcers and skin diseases which I found so prevalent amongst the natives.

In the centre of the island of Mioko is an enormous tree some 150 feet in height, and a landmark for many miles.

Digitized by Google

In the upper branches flocks of flying foxes and pigeons make their homes, and towards sundown the sky is black with them circling round and round before roosting. Mr. Schultze has had a large space cleared round the base, and employs a native to keep it in order.

Having obtained the services of the one or two men I required, I said good-bye to my kind host, who had been so excessively thoughtful in arranging everything for my comfort, compelling me every day to dine with him, and presenting me on my departure with a very fine collection of ethnological specimens.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

A BAD GALE—I AM OBLIGED TO RETURN TO MIOKO—A FRESH START—NEW IRELAND NATIVES—STEFFAN STRAITS NATIVES BRING CANOE LOADS OF PINEAPPLES—I MEET A FRENCH TRADER IN AN OPEN BOAT—I AM PRESENT AT A NATIVE DANCE WHICH TOOK TEN YEARS TO PREPARE—WE ARRIVE AT KUNG—A THIEF—THE DESTRUCTION OF A VILLAGE—STRANGE NATIVE HEAD-DRESS—THE NATIVES COLLECT BEETLES—CURIOUS NATIVE IDEAS—PALMISTRY—ONE OF MY SAILORS RUNS AWAY—PROBABLY EATEN BY NATIVES—MEN AND WOMEN QUITE NAKED—I START FOR THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS.

On the 2nd of January, 1897, I started for Kung, an island on the extreme north coast of New Hanover, and situated in latitude 2° 26′ south, longitude 149° 55′ east. My object in visiting this place was not so much that I was desirous of making collections in natural history as that I hoped to learn from a French trader living there some reliable information about the Admiralty Islands I purposed visiting, and also to learn something of Mathias Island, he having traded in those regions for some years past, and, I heard, had a very good knowledge of the natives.

On the 4th of January, owing to a terrible north-west gale, I was compelled to return to Mioko, as otherwise the currents might have swept me down the St. George's

Digitized by Google

Channel. After two more days here the weather moderated a little, and I therefore made another start. Crawling up the north-east coast of New Britain, so as to keep out of the full force of the currents, and keeping well under the lee of the land as far as Man Island, I managed to procure a good start in a northerly direction, and a long board across to the New Ireland coast, and so by taking short tacks was able to make good headway.

The natives, who so densely populate New Ireland,

A NEW IRELAND GIRL.

came out from their different villages in most beautifully-constructed canoes as we went along, to exchange their cocoanuts, spices, and ornaments for tobacco. They are ferocious cannibals and very treacherous; wear no clothing whatever, and although many of them could speak pidjin English, having been away to Fiji, Samoa, and Queensland as labour hands for the plantations there, they are none the more to be trusted. In fact my experience has taught me that those natives of the South Pacific who have lived amongst white people, and have thus

Digitized by Google

gained a little knowledge, are generally worse when they return to their own countries, often inciting their fellow-creatures to kill and plunder.

After many days of struggle against storms, head winds, rain, calms, and terrific heat, we arrived in the Steffan Straits on the north-west coast of New Ireland.

These straits derive their name from a naval officer who was wounded in an attack made by the natives, and they divide New Ireland from New Hanover. They are

NATIVE GIRL.

about nine miles long and two broad, with a current running like a sluice, and quite impossible to attempt to sail against. In front of us was a large island about the centre of the straits, named Mausoleum Island, that has one cone-like mount on it about nine hundred feet high.

I had been warned that the natives of this island were very treacherous, and so did not stop at all; but they came out in great numbers in canoes, and sold me

Digitized by Google

quantities of beautiful pineapples, which they said grew all over the island.

A few miles inside the straits I came to the out-station belonging to the German Trading Company. Here I found a young Mexican, who was very pleased to see a white face again. I anchored there for the night, resuming my journey with the tide at daybreak next day. Continuous streams of natives paid me visits, and traded fruit and fish for tobacco. Ten pineapples were obtainable for one stick of tobacco valued at a halfpenny. Several natives came on board, all willing to show me the passage which would enable me to sail up the east coast of New Hanover and inside a barrier reef which extends along that coast.

After a mile or two we were inside, and the sight which presented itself I shall never forget. The numerous islands forming the reef on my right with densely wooded shores and prolific undergrowth, and the grand scenery of New Hanover to the left, with its mountain range extending as far as the eye could reach, and its peaks attaining an altitude of about 2,000 feet; the bold headlands and the roar of the surf breaking over the coral reef for miles, reminded one of some beautiful panorama; and although the temperature was about 104° in the shade, there was a cool and delicious breeze blowing all the time.

Natives were to be seen, as we went along, in all directions, some here and there standing upright in their canoes with spear in hand, on the look-out for fish to bring me in exchange for the fragrant weed; others running along the shores, and all frantic with the excitement of having a ship amongst them again. These natives reminded me very much of the inhabitants of New Britain, and were all most anxious to trade anything they possessed for tobacco. The reefs are very numerous here, and require a considerable amount of circumspection

Digitized by Google

to navigate, especially with the sun ahead, and I was obliged to keep a man at the masthead all the way. The wind falling light towards evening, and the current proving against us, I was obliged to anchor for the night. At the first intimation of returning day we were under way again, and at six o'clock, to our delight, though astonishment, I perceived the sail of a boat bearing down upon us. On reaching it I discovered it to contain the French trader to whom I was on my way. He was going to the trader I had left the day before, but sending his boat on instead with a letter, he came on board and returned with me.

He said that a mile or two further on our way there was a large village on a small island, where the people were preparing a very big festivity and dance. This affair, he told me, had been no less than ten years in preparation, and promised to be something so exceptional that as it was to take place the very next day, I elected to anchor on purpose to witness it.

About seven o'clock in the morning I went on shore with the Frenchman and two boys he had brought with him, and who were all armed, and also four of my own men, all of whom I armed with a rifle a-piece. For although we did not anticipate any trouble, especially on the occasion of such a festivity, natives are strange beings, often incited to anger on the least provocation, and then at all times carrying their argument at the spear's point. The village was dressed in its holiday raiment, various coloured crotons decorated the houses, festoons of bright leaves and flowers hung from tree to tree, and at the end of the village and in front of the house of their chief, huge heaps of taros, bananas, pine-apples, and yams were stacked up to a very considerable height. The men, women, and children were covered in their war paint from head to foot. In the centre of the

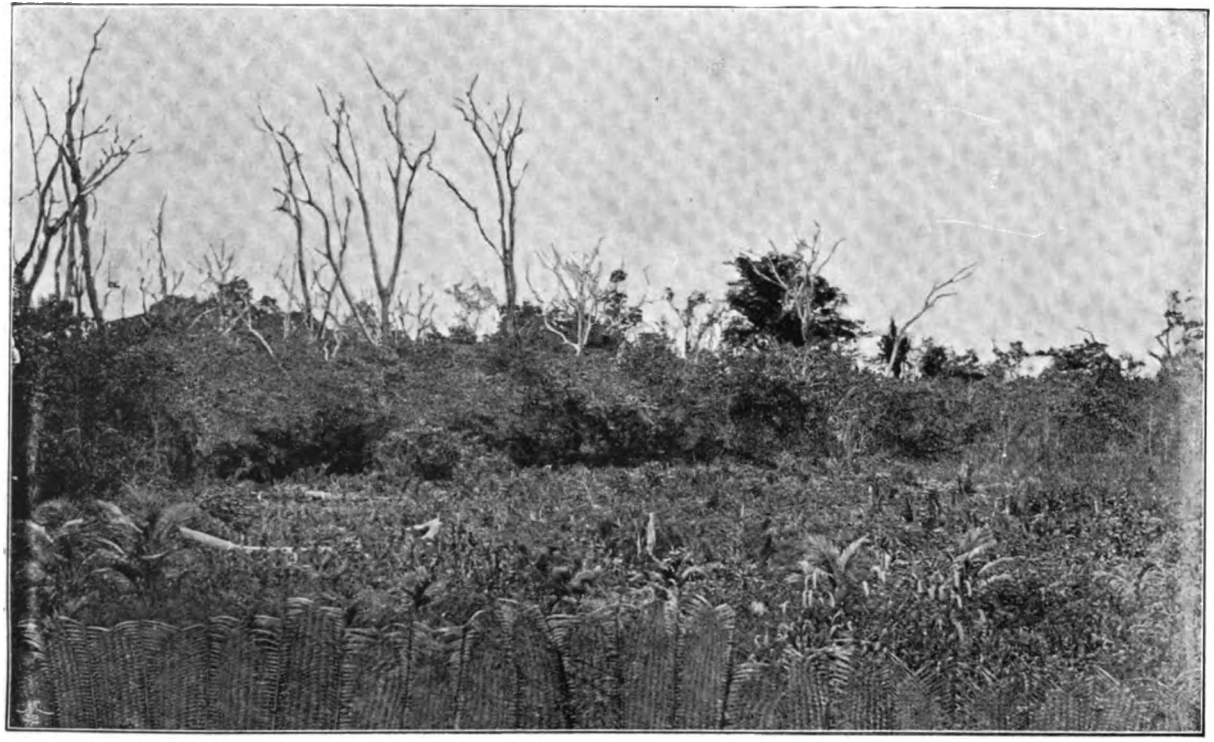
Digitized by Google

village a large enclosure had been erected, surrounded by high branches through which it was impossible to see, and which acted as the green room for the performers, and within which every one taking part in the ceremony was collected, no one else being allowed inside.

After we had arrived a short time the tom-toms commenced their weird and dismal dronings, and we could see by the faces and whisperings of the women and visitors—for people had come from distant islands and far away countries to witness this performance—that the time was approaching when the first item on the programme would commence. After a time, amidst a most deafening noise of yells, screams, and hootings, men bounded out of the bush and began their gyrations to the sound of the tom-toms, and I was much pleased with the extraordinary time they kept throughout. Whirling round and round, waving branches of crotons, and handling their spears with great dexterity, they kept up in this way for fully half an hour, going through quite twenty different figures, some of which were really very pretty. I managed to secure two photographs, but the light under the trees proved too dim to hope for any good result. These two negatives, I am sorry to say, were afterwards destroyed accidentally. After witnessing two or three more similar dances and one performed by women, who were by no means behind the men in agility, I returned on board and we at once set sail, arriving at the station on the island of Kung the following afternoon.

This trader, who has been here a great number of years, is quite a character. At one time a convict in New Caledonia, he with four others escaped in a small, open boat, and after travelling in this small craft, without sails or compasses, and with but very scanty provisions, for some weeks, was picked up by a passing ship. Two of the party had succumbed, but the others were brought

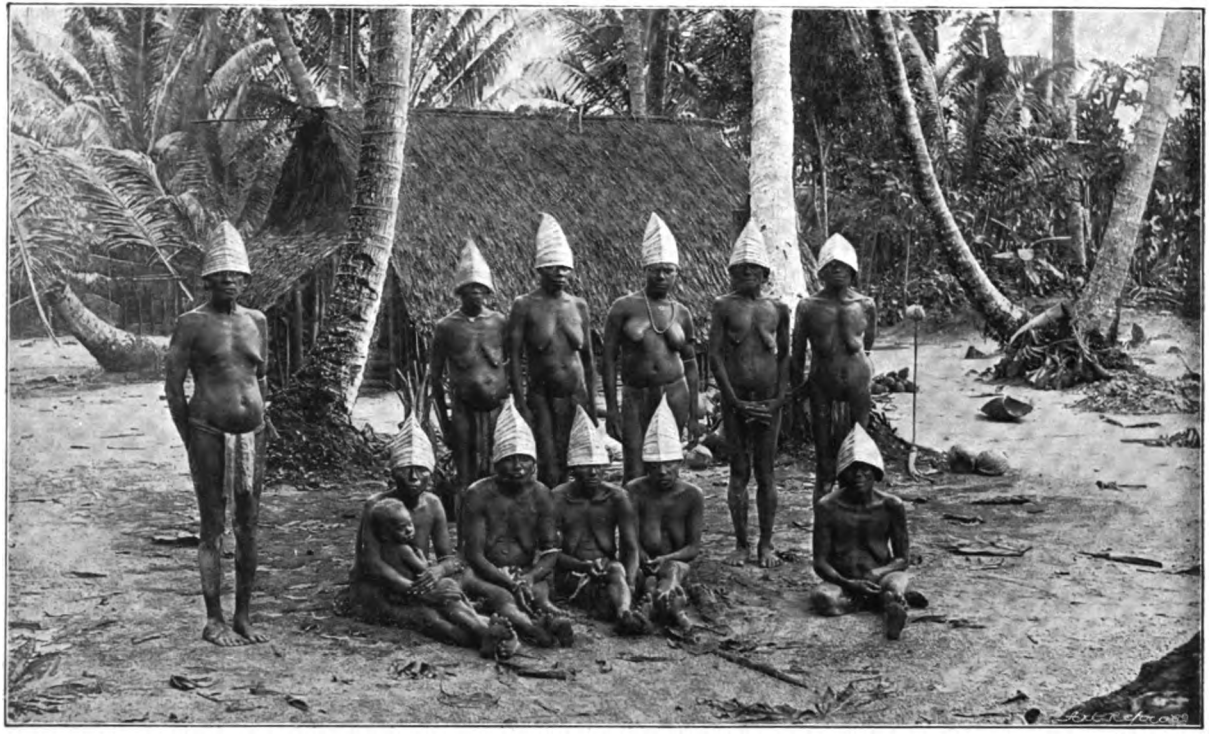
Digitized by Google



A TRIBAL FIGHT, NEW HANOVER.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A VILLAGE ON THE ISLAND OF KUNG, NEW HANOVER.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

to the Bismarck Archipelago, and Mons. Gangloff, at whose house I had arrived, started trading as a livelihood. He is the terror of the whole district, and the natives live in fear and trembling of him. An explosion of dynamite a year or two ago carried away his right arm and eye, but with the stump of the former he is very clever and uses it when gesticulating in a very amusing manner. He heard on our arrival that the natives had come over to his island from the mainland during his absence, and had stolen a box belonging to one of his boys, and his fury at learning it was unbounded. Taking a few of his New Britain boys in a boat, he pulled straight across to the village of the thief, and very soon afterwards I heard a shot or two fired and then saw smoke curling up above the trees, intimating that he had set fire to the village. It may seem hard, perhaps, that the whole village should suffer on account of the theft of one man. But it appears that the natives of New Hanover are arrant thieves, all of them, and that had he not taken stringent measures at once, in all probability his own boats would eventually have been stolen and he himself murdered. The box was afterwards returned and an indemnity paid in the shape of so many pigs and a quantity of tortoise shell.

Mons. Gangloff promised to pilot me to the Admiralty Islands if I would postpone my departure for a short period, as he was expecting the New Guinea Company's labour schooner *Senta* to come and take away the dried fish he had prepared. He has a contract by which he provides properly dried fish for £20 per ton to the New Guinea Company for their labour hands in New Guinea. Sending several boats away daily with charges of dynamite, he by this means captures enormous supplies of fish, every one of which is split and salted and spread out to dry.

The island of Kung is in all respects similar to the

Digitized by Google

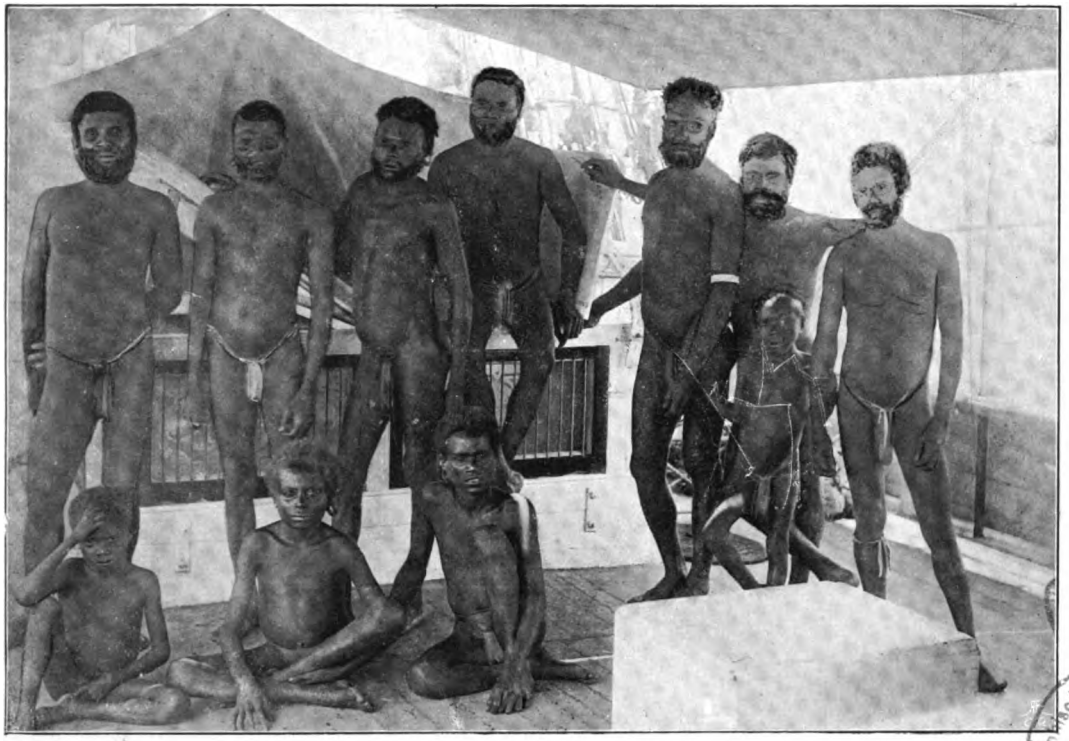
many islands always to be found on the coasts of countries in the South Pacific. It was low and densely wooded, had a nice sandy beach, and was surrounded entirely by a long coral reef, with but one or two passages wide enough to permit of a small boat entering and grounding on the beach. The island was fringed also with cocoanut palms, and although certainly not a mile in circumference, it contained two good-sized villages, each containing several hundred inhabitants.

The natives themselves are somewhat similar to those of New Ireland, the men going perfectly naked, while the women, besides wearing a small bunch of fibre in front and behind resembling a wisp of hay, and which is kept in its place by a tendril of some plant fastened round the loins, also cover their heads with a curious arrangement of banana leaves sewn together, resembling somewhat a fool's cap, but having a curve backwards.

Sweet potatoes and taros grow here in great quantities, and the people consequently are very fat and well and free from the various skin diseases usually so prevalent. I was astonished at so many of the natives speaking pidjin English, and on making inquiries found that years ago a great number of them had worked on the plantations in Fiji and Queensland before Germany took possession of these islands. This goes far to prove the great intelligence possessed by these people, as they could not have worked for Englishmen since 1884, when Great Britain ceased to protect this archipelago, and yet they have still retained their knowledge of our language, and in some instances spoke it most fluently.

One morning, whilst passing through the village, I caught sight of a native apparently very much interested in the palm of the hand of another, and on interrogating him I learned that they have a belief that every man, woman, and child belongs to one or another species of

Digitized by Google



NEW HANOVER NATIVES ON BOARD.

Digitized by Google

Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-der-K.u.K.Kriegs-Marine

Digitized by Google

birds, according to the lines of their hands. Those possessing sharp lines belong to the hawks, those with soft one to pigeons, and so on. This is truly a strange coincidence, that these wild and savage cannibals, who are for ever fighting and seeking whom they may devour, should believe in the old-time palmistry of our forefathers at home, and they believe in it to a far greater extent than we ever did. I asked him to what family of bird I belonged, and he at once told me. Some days afterwards I asked another man who belonged to another village, and he told me the same bird.

The trader's house itself was indeed a wonderful construction; built as it was by this one European who had but one arm, it could hardly be said to be faultlessly put together. It consisted of five small rooms, all of which were numbered in large figures, but all under the usual ordinary stretch of corrugated iron roofing. Mons. Gangloff is a veritable Brigham Young, and has many wives, principally natives of New Hanover. After I had been there a week the labour schooner arrived. But as the trader had unfortunately just at that time strained himself very badly he was obliged to go away to New Britain, where there was a doctor.

The natives came off to the ship daily, and were very keen to collect beetles for me, receiving payment for each bottle they filled with them. But it rained in torrents every day, and I hardly ever saw the sun shine during the whole of my visit here, consequently the lepidoptera collection did not increase at all. Early in the morning sometimes the rain would hold off for an hour or two, and I was able to send my hunters out and get a few birds, but they were always back by midday, drenched. Sometimes an enthusiastic savage would not only fill his bottle with beetles, but would cram in butterflies, lizards, and, in fact, everything he came across that had life, and great

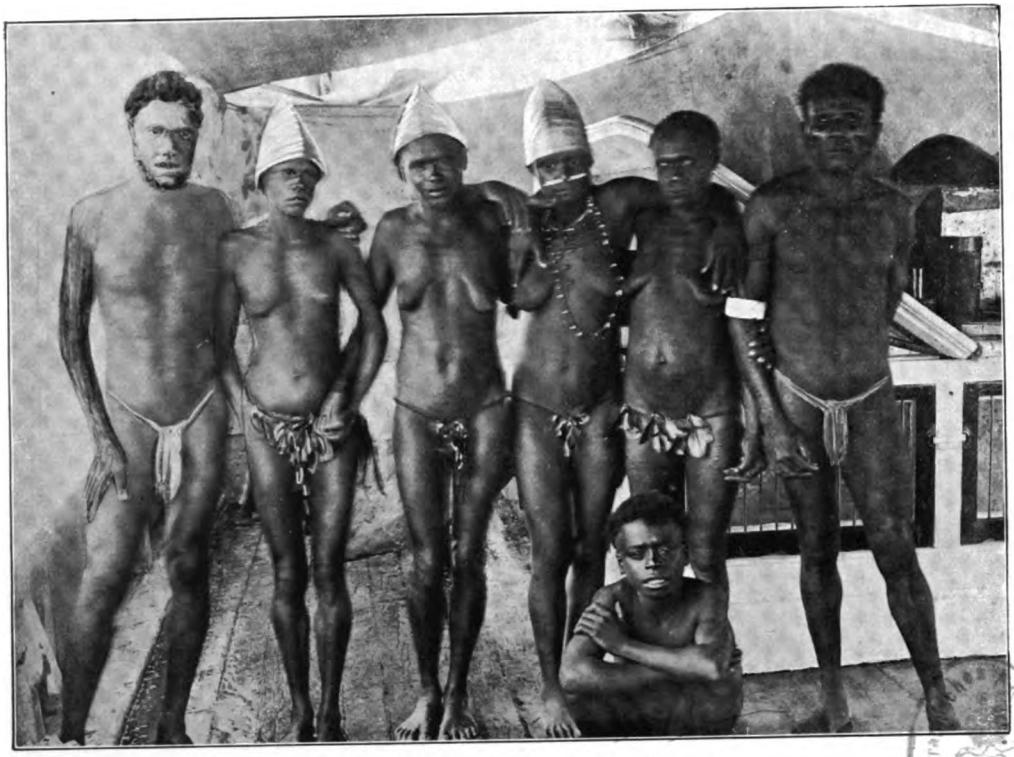
Digitized by Google

would be his chagrin when he saw me empty out and throw away nearly all his day's work. They were all very curious to know what I did with those things—did I eat them or did I take them to another country and bring them to life again? "Yes, that's what happens," they would say, "he takes them across the sea to another country and makes them come back to life," and one who had been to Australia would corroborate this opinion by telling them that what they imagined was quite true, for he had seen them himself alive there. How many sticks of tobacco did I get paid for bringing them back to life and letting them go in my country? they would ask me, and many other simple queries would be put, until I got tired of their chatter and would drive them off. After a week or two more here, and finding that the great banks of rain clouds seem to travel right up from New Ireland to this part before dispersing, I deemed it advisable to shift round to the west coast, where, I was informed, I should find a sheltered bay into which two rivers ran, and at the same time should be quite at the foot of the mountains.

My coleoptera collection at Kung was better than I had anticipated, and it was through this fact that I was induced to stay longer. It consisted of about five thousand specimens and over five hundred species, amongst which I hoped to find a number new to science. Of the one hundred and fifty birds I shot there were over a hundred different species, and some, I anticipated, were new.

Sailing round to the west coast of the island I found a bay with a tolerably good sandy beach and a small river running down from the mountains, and so I anchored here and started again sending my people and going myself daily into the forest. One day Harry, one of my sailors, asked for a gun to try and shoot some birds for

Digitized by Google



TWO NEW HANOVER MEN WITH THEIR WIVES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

me, and off he went. At night time I was surprised to see through my glasses one of the butterfly-hunters carrying his gun on the beach, who, when he came on board, told me that the sailor had seen him in the forest and had asked him to take back the gun as he was going away to live in the jungle. I never saw him again, and am at a loss even to-day to understand why he did such a thing. There is one thing certain, the natives after a time would be bound to kill him, being a stranger in their land. He was one of my best men, and I had never had any occasion to reprove him for anything, which made it all the more strange.

The natives here were very friendly, and brought us a great many taros daily. One man in particular got quite attached to us, coming off by himself on one or two logs of wood lashed together, for the natives had no canoes here, stating that they did not know how to make them. I suspect it was owing to their extreme laziness, however. This man would come at daybreak and stay till dark, lying about, but occasionally being made to do a little work on the deck. What delighted him most was for one of my men to paint him from head to foot. He was very useful in this way, the men often trying the consistency of their paint upon his back or face, and one day when my captain was varnishing in the saloon this man received a coat of it all over himself much to our amusement, and, I may say, his also.

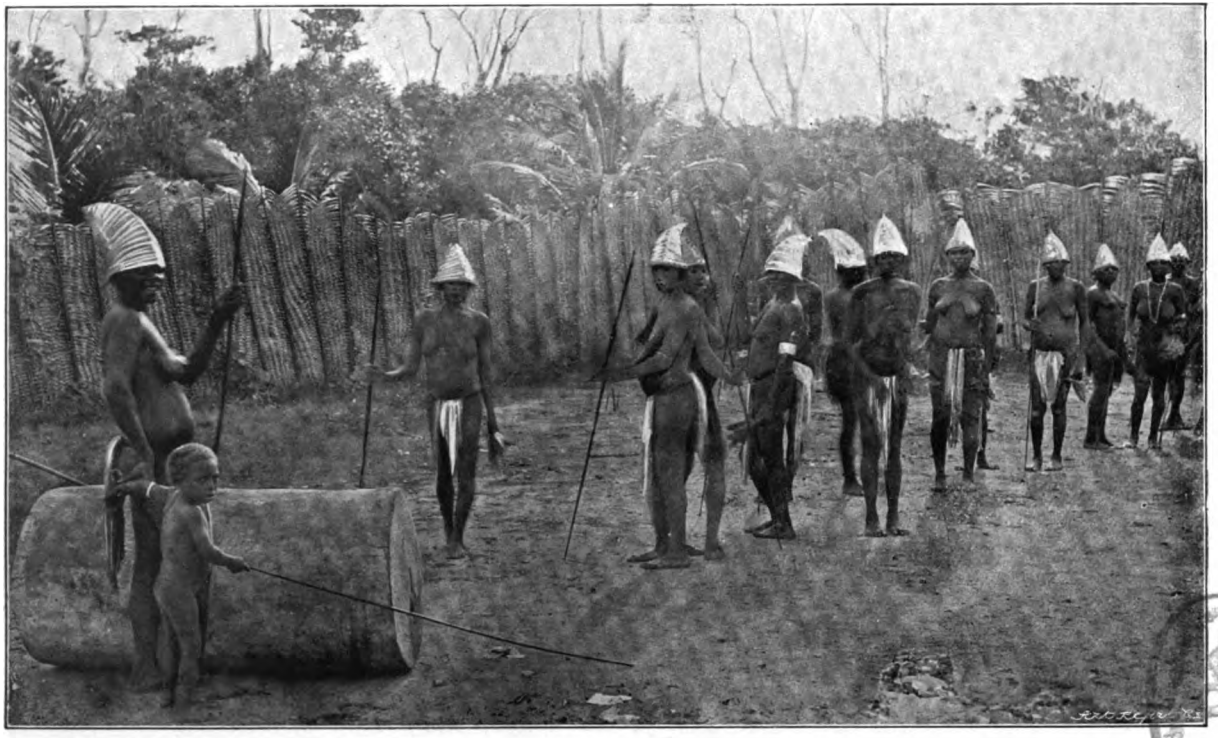
They wore absolutely no clothing whatever, although decency has obliged me to have them draped for publication, and modesty, as we understand it, in this way was absolutely unknown to them. Women and young girls were also quite nude, and often would swim off to the ship for a stick of tobacco, but I made them tie a few leaves round their loins whenever they came on the deck.

I found a great many snipe and wild duck here,

Digitized by Google

and used to shoot them daily for the table. But the birds were almost identical with those shot at Kung. After a week or ten days spent here, and the monsoon being very steady, I made up my mind to start for the Admiralty Islands, and so on the 31st of March I took in a fresh supply of water, and the next morning said goodbye to these simple savages. After the anchor had been hauled up at break of day and we were leaving the land far behind us, the sun began to show himself above the tops of the trees, when we perceived a solitary native paddling his log of wood after us as fast as he could and shouting all the time. It was our friend, who had overslept himself, and I suppose wished to come on board and see what he could get for the last time, but all his endeavours to reach us were in vain, and very soon after we left him, a tiny speck upon the ocean, far astern.

Digitized by Google



A FEMALE DANCE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS—EXCITEMENT OF THE NATIVES —ST. GABRIEL ISLAND—I RECEIVE A VISIT FROM THE CHIEF—PECULIAR STYLE OF DRESSING THE HAIR—NATIVE COSTUME—A VISIT FROM A WOMAN—THE NATIVES ARE TOO DANGEROUS TO PERMIT OF OUR LANDING—THE MURDERERS OF A WHITE MAN —THE CHIEF STEALS MY HAMMER—I DISCOVER AN UNCHARTED PATCH OF ROCK — I DEPART FOR ADMIRALTY ISLAND.

On the 3rd of April we sighted the Admiralty Group—which were discovered by Schouten, A.D. 1615, but about which very little information was obtained until H.M.S. *Challenger* steamed through them in 1875—and some fifteen miles out observed the sails of very large canoes. The people had evidently sighted us from the mountains and had come off at once to meet us. The first to come up to us was an enormous craft, with outriggers to steady it. Its sail was of matting and fibre. There were, I should say, quite thirty men on board. When they found they could not reach the yacht, not having hauled round in time, they all jumped into the sea and tried to swim to us, shouting and waving their arms in the madness of their excitement. The next to arrive was more fortunate, and coming close enough I ordered a rope to be thrown them, which they made fast round their bows. I permitted two to come on board.

Digitized by Google

They were certainly the wildest and strangest people I had ever beheld in my life. Shouting to those in the canoe being towed, they worked themselves into such a frenzy that I momentarily expected them to fall down in a fit.

Shortly afterwards I arrived at the island of St. Gabriel, and found a very good anchorage under the lee of a small islet at the western end. Swarms of natives came out directly the anchor was down, gesticulating wildly and all talking at once. I allowed the chief, whose name I found to be Kanau, to come on board accompanied by a second chief. These two men, in point of size, were very fine specimens of humanity, enormously fat and evidently extremely lazy. They continued to chew betel nut constantly, without ceasing, as indeed did all the natives throughout these islands, and only discharging the cud when desiring to eat food. Tobacco seemed unknown to them, and when, after much persuasion, I induced one man to try a little, the wry faces he made caused a considerable amount of amusement.

The island of St. Gabriel appeared to be more thickly populated than some of the larger ones of this group, and I could see swarms of natives every day I was there, lining the beach. The natives themselves wore but few ornaments, those they had consisting of shell armlets and human bones. A curious piece of carved wood, about two feet long, decorated with feathers, is sometimes worn at the back of the neck, intimating that the wearer is on the war-path. The men allow their hair to grow to a considerable length and then tie it together at the top in a huge bunch, from which a great number of feathers are always streaming. Many pronged bamboo combs, also tipped with long feathers, are worn at the sides and front. The "Bulla Ovum" shell, which is recorded to have been worn as their sole dress some years ago, is

Digitized by Google

KANAU, A CHIEF OF ST. GABRIEL.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

still invariably carried in the indispensable basket always seen slung on their arm, but a larger dress of native cloth wound round their loins and hanging down in front is substituted for it. They appeared most friendly, and brought me, as a present from their women, great quantities of sweet potatoes and another root, the name of which I forget, but which was evidently cultivated to some considerable extent. They were most eager to barter their obsidian spears, arm-rings, and bowls, which were made in great varieties and exceedingly well carved, for small beads, files, and knives. These natives, who are born natural traders, will haggle over a small arm-ring or a piece of tortoise shell to such an extent that one at last loses patience and refuses in disgust to deal at any price. When offering any article they possess for sale their praises or protestations are accompanied by most appropriate expressions. One man especially, I remember, who endeavoured to persuade me to give him an axe for a blade or two of tortoise shell, might indeed have been a queen's counsellor urging the innocence of his client before a grand jury, and with every bit as much force and energy.

For the few days I remained here the chiefs came off at sunrise, and lolling about the deck, making everything black and filthy they came in contact with, would stay until they were literally driven over the side at night. Only once was a woman brought on board, who was said to be the wife of the chief. Hideously ugly, and with hair matted with some filthy substance all over her head, she had a great many small, round marks burned into her body in rows, and round her legs had been woven grass bands so tightly that the flesh had grown right over them, and must have occasioned the poor creature considerable pain.

Digitized by Google

They told me that a white man had lived there many years before, but that the natives had come over from the larger island a few miles away and murdered him, but from the fact that I saw one with a small hand-glass (not a trade one), and others with articles of cookery, evidences of a white man's abode, I should not have gone as far away as they said to look for his murderers, and I let them know my opinion.*

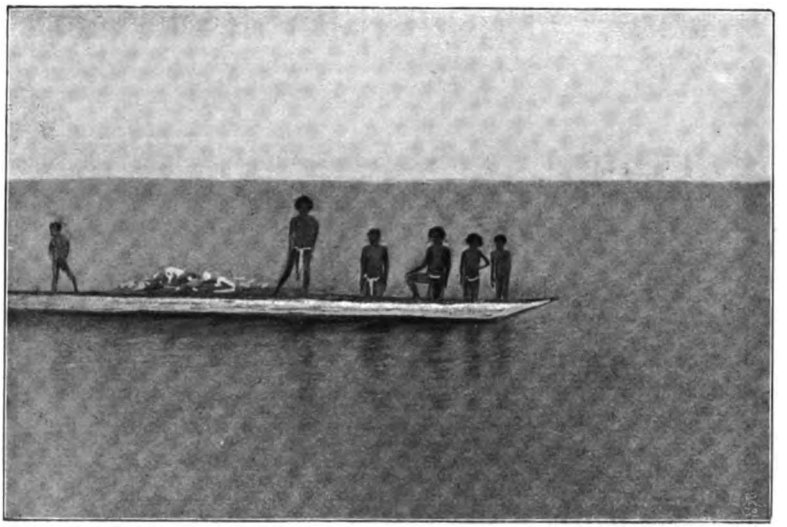
For one or two days every one was anxious to collect beetles and butterflies in exchange for files, beads, &c., but none of my own hunters, offer them what I would, could be persuaded to leave the yacht, and I must say the looks of the people, and their superabundance of apparent friendship, weighed much with me in my decision not to land myself. Nevertheless, I gave the natives butterfly-nets, and although it rained most of the time I stopped here they brought me some few specimens, generally spoiled, but still the majority of them were new to science, and have since been described by the Hon. Walter Rothschild.

After two or three days the natives got tired of collecting, preferring to come and loll about the ship or climb the rigging like so many children, and seeing it was of no use to remain here any longer, I made up my mind to move on to Admiralty Island, where it might be possible to find an uninhabited shore, which would enable my hunters and myself to go into the forest. The day before I departed the chief failed to put in his usual appearance, and suspecting something at once, I began to

* It appears that this poor man, I believe a Scotchman, had, with a certain amount of trade goods, visited in a schooner these islands, but had been attacked and murdered, the natives robbing him of everything; for which atrocious deed they have never been punished, and in fact, up to the time of my visit here, none of the German war vessels who are always cruising in the Bismarck Archipelago, have ever paid these islands a visit.

Digitized by Google

look round for what might be lost, and it was not long before I discovered that a hammer one of the crew had been using the day before was not forthcoming. I at once informed the natives who were on board of the fact, and they appeared very frightened and at once exclaimed, "Kana, Kana," offering at the same time to go and fetch it, but I knew by their anxiety to leave the ship I should never see them again. They swam on shore,



ADMIRALTY ISLANDERS.

leaving their baskets of betel nuts and a large bowl they had brought for sale behind them, and it turned out to be as I thought; they never returned. This small incident shows full well that even in, I suppose, the farthermost part of the world, away from civilisation of any kind, theft is looked upon as something for which punishment is merited.

On leaving the island of St. Gabriel I found, about four

Digitized by Google

miles distant from it in a north-west direction from the north side of the island, a large, uncharted coral patch, of large area, and having three fathoms of water on it. Also another about two miles north to north-north-east from the small island adjoining St. Gabriel with but one fathom on it.

On the 7th of April I arrived at Admiralty Island, entering the Barrier Reef between the two small islands on the north-east end. Numbers of huge canoes with great mat sails came out some miles to sea to meet me, all crowded with natives shouting and gesticulating wildly. The first to meet us was a smaller one, to whom we gave a tow-rope, and it was very amusing to see how others coming after tried to fetch the ship, and how they one and all failed, some capsising in the attempt, others springing into the water in their endeavour to catch hold of the canoe in tow.

Half a mile inside the reef we rounded up and dropped anchor under the lee of a small island, intending to remain for the rest of the day, but I was so surrounded by large canoes and overpowering numbers of natives, who appeared to be anything but friendly, all waving their obsidian spears and gesticulating in a most frantic manner, and I deemed it advisable to get under way again. These repulsive looking cannibals were impudent in the extreme, boarding the ship contrary to my orders, and at one time I felt it likely that we should have trouble with them. Imagine if you can, reader, a small cruising yacht in a bay many thousands of miles from civilisation, with no steam power and very little wind, and but two white men on board—for with the exception of my captain, a Scotchman, my crew were all coloured men—completely surrounded by thirty-two enormous war canoes, nearly every one of which was as long as the yacht itself, and having fully ten men on each, all ferocious cannibals, carrying in

Digitized by Google

their hands several formidable obsidian spears. I say imagine these numbers of wild people on every part of your bulwarks, all talking, screaming and gesticulating at once. The situation was not pleasant, and it was with a feeling of intense relief that I felt the ship moving ever so slowly through the water, and saw with great pleasure the canoes dropping one by one astern.

This obsidian which they utilise for their spear-heads is a volcanic substance resembling thick green glass, generally worked in a triangular form, sharpened at the point to the fineness of a needle, and having the shape of a tongue of fire, about twelve inches in length. It is then fitted into the hard wood of the spear, and at once becomes a very formidable weapon.

At sundown we anchored a few miles further on off the island of Pichalew, which was low and densely covered with forest, and having a sheltered bay and sandy beach. Strangely enough the natives here, who were very numerous, were entirely different in character to those with whom we had just parted, coming off in great numbers in their canoes with presents of yams, taros, bananas, and cocoanuts, and what is more unusual, a present of a large bowl of cooked potatoes from the women of the village, refusing to accept any payment whatever in return. It was hard to think that this apparent generosity was shown me with an ulterior object, but I am sorry to say I am forced to, as one boy I had with me who understood some words of their language heard them say among themselves that perhaps now I would come on shore, when they at once would make short work of me, and capture the ship. This was indeed disheartening, for my hunters refused to leave the vessel, under any pretence whatever, and I feared it would be absolutely impossible for me to go on shore, at any rate where there were people. My boys all came to me shortly

Digitized by Google

after this occurrence and told me that I might kill them if I wished, and they would not raise a finger against me, but they would not leave the ship and so allow their bodies to be cooked and eaten. I therefore made up my mind to retrace my steps and work round by St. George and Jesu Maria Islands, the south-east end of the group, and where perhaps I might be more likely to find some of the smaller ones uninhabited.

On April 10th I arrived at St. George's Island, which is densely wooded, and attains an elevation of about 800 feet, finding but an indifferent anchorage, and also a great number of people. I thought it wise to go through the St. Andrew's Straits, which are situated the south end of the island, and anchor among several small islets I saw further to the eastward, and where it was not likely we should have so many visitors. The coastal people on St. George's Island had been driven into the mountains by the people inhabiting the smaller island opposite, who had taken possession of the coast to plant their taros and sugar-cane. Passing down through St. Andrew's Straits I discovered another uncharted patch with only six feet of water on it, one mile from the north-east end of St. George's Island at the entrance of the Straits, and also several patches, covered with from three to five fathoms of water, so that any one entering these straits should do so with extreme caution.

All the way down the straits I was besieged by canoes hanging on by tow-lines, and quite seventy of the natives crowded on to the ship anxious to barter their spears and tortoise shell. I was obliged to place my men in different parts of the vessel with loaded rifles owing to the appearance of the natives, and, had it not been for this precaution, I am confident a desperate attack would have been made upon us. I found a very effectual way of clearing the decks without giving offence was to suddenly

Digitized by Google

open an umbrella—an act which has served me in good stead on many occasions, for those natives who have never seen this article before would invariably jump overboard at once. I found it extremely difficult to trade with them, as they all asked for axes and tomahawks for any small thing I wanted to get from them. The reason for this was apparent. The officers on board H.M.S. *Challenger* must have given them one or two of these, and they have since discovered the extreme utility of them in the manufacture of their canoes, their own tools, made of shell or stone, being of a very primitive nature.

Anchoring off three small islands—the largest of which being Waikatu Island, where I found a village built on piles far out into the water—I made up my mind to remain here for a day or two and see what I could get on either of them; but, alas! these were productive of little more than a few beetles and one jungle hen, which had evidently got there by mistake, as there were no other birds found there. A few people at different times came off. One man brought me an extremely well-carved image of a pig of about three feet in length and cut out of a solid block of wood, forming a bowl, at first asking an axe for it, and, on this being refused, a fish-hook: I handed him the latter, when he said he required a piece of wire he saw on deck attached to the end. I did this, but he still seemed dissatisfied, requesting a longer piece. I again fastened on some more wire, when to my disgust, he said, "Fix on another fish-hook at the other end!" I seized the lot and crammed it back into my trading-box, driving him over the side. Returning shortly afterwards, he gave me the bowl for one much smaller fish-hook and without any wire at all; but as he was just going away I found that one of the legs he had artfully kept hidden was broken off, and, collaring him in time, I sat him down

Digitized by Google

on the deck and told him to make a new one and fasten it on. This took him the whole afternoon, but it was very instructive to see how these people work with such unhandy tools—an obsidian knife and a bit of shell being the only implements he possessed. Breaking off a piece of a pole he had in his canoe and used for punting over the reefs, he squared the end to be joined on to the broken part, and, smearing it with some charcoal, pressed on the new piece, which showed him where more was to be pared off. This process was repeated several times until the two parts fitted to a nicety. Then, rounding off the new leg to the requisite length, he fixed in some small pegs and so fitted it on in a most ingenious manner, demanding an axe but receiving a few beads for his trouble.

On April 12th, as I was about to go on shore to try again for birds and beetles amongst the thick undergrowth of one of the smaller islands, I counted no less than thirty-eight canoes coming towards the ship, and so abandoned the idea of landing. Shortly afterwards they had all surrounded me; there were quite 150 people, about eighty of whom came on board, for it was impossible to keep them off without quarrelling. Up the rigging to the very masthead, into the galley, down the forecastle, and even into the saloon, they swarmed everywhere, and, what with their shouting and screaming at one another, the ship was a perfect pandemonium. They brought arm-rings, shell-dresses, dogs'-teeth, spears, bowls, tortoise shell and pearl shell, their lime-pots, and even pieces of their own hair to barter for beads, red cloth, or knives. It did not matter in the least what I offered them, they invariably desired something more, and the purchase of some small and useless curio would sometimes take all the afternoon. These people are of the most intelligent order, often anticipating a remark

Digitized by Google

you are about to make, and adding a few witty words of their own; for their language is most simple and very easily understood, and, after learning about a hundred words, one can almost understand everything they have to say.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

SMART NATIVES—FRIENDLY SALUTATIONS—EXTRAORDINARY MEMORY—ARRANT THIEVES—NO WOMEN—THE NATIVES CONTEMPLATE KILLING ME—SPEAR WOUNDS ON NATIVES—COWARDICE—MY OWN MEN ARE VERY FRIGHTENED—VERY RICH ISLANDS—NATIVE VOCABULARY.

ONE morning two different lots of tortoise shell were offered to me by two men. The one lot consisted of large and valuable shell and the other rather below the average size, and consequently not worth so much; for the former an axe was asked, and for the latter two knives. I had been in the habit of giving a large knife for large shell and a small one for that of lesser size, whereupon I said: "Kurt mundrean piginbon mundrean, kurt leem piginbon leem" (meaning to say, "Big knife for big tortoise shell, small knife for small tortoise shell"). The brother of the chief, who was sitting close to me on the deck, immediately produced two pieces no bigger than the palm of one's hand and of no value whatever, and, laying them down in front of me, exclaimed, in his own language, of which this is the translation, "Webster, this is for you; you always speak the truth: hand over a small knife."

The first question invariably asked by all on my arrival at any village was "Tokalager?" ("What is your name?"). This always intimates that the people are desirous of

Digitized by Google

establishing friendly relations. When you have once told it to them they call you by it always. Many natives spoke to me of a certain ship's captain, mentioning his name, and who, I afterwards learned, had passed through the group nineteen years previously, when he had not remained amongst them for more than a week. This at least proves the excellence of their memories. They are of a very treacherous nature and born thieves, and I was therefore obliged to keep a most strict watch day and night, always having one and sometimes two of my men with loaded rifles. Nevertheless, notwithstanding the vigilance of my crew, something or another was stolen from the ship at every place I called at. On one occasion a native shell-dress, for which I had bargained the greater part of the day and had at last purchased at the man's own price to get rid of him, so persistent he was in pushing it in my face and demanding a large knife for it, was after all stolen back again when my face was turned, and was the next day brought to me for sale by some one else altogether.

With the one exception I have mentioned in a previous chapter, it was never my fortune to see any of their women nearer than 500 yards, and although I offered all sorts of inducements to the natives to persuade them to bring their women-folk to pay me a visit, they never did so, and of course, after the observations I have made and the treacherous looks of the people, I did not venture on shore.

The only two weapons they appeared to use were the obsidian spear and an obsidian dagger, the blade of the latter being about ten inches in length and the handle worked of the same material as their head-combs. This was carried by being passed through the hair, and so a native who apparently was unarmed very often had a dangerous weapon at hand, and it was always my custom

Digitized by Google

to thoroughly examine their head-gear before permitting them to come on board. The hair of these people is worn in a slightly different fashion to those of St. Gabriel: very bushy all round the front, they wear an enormous fringe which is combed backwards, but at the back of the head they tie it like the other natives in a huge knob resembling the tail of a prize draught horse at an agricultural show, bound round and round for about a foot in length, standing straight out from the head, and displaying a bushy tuft at the further end with a feather comb in it.

A great number of the people I observed to have spear wounds, but without one single exception they were all at the back of their persons, from which one draws the ominous conclusion that they do not present a bold and fearless front to their enemies.

They repeat their words many times over when speaking, every word being spoken in a louder and louder tone, until, at the end of the sentence, they are absolutely screaming. For instance, if a native wished to say, "Tedor lockon solowan" ("There are plenty here"), he would exclaim "Tedor, tedor, lockon, lockon, lockon, lockon, solowan, solowan, solowan, solowan, solowan—solowaaaaan!"

It is customary here, as in every other country in the world, when offering an article for sale to ask a great deal more than is expected, and often a native will take away his goods altogether and remain absent for days before offering them again, sometimes bringing something else in its place. Nevertheless eventually you will get what you want provided you have enough patience to wait until it is again shown you, but once take an interest in it or express the slightest desire to possess it, you will have to give the man his own price or you will never own it at all.

The things which they seem to set least store by are their bowls, which were really very beautifully carved and are always obtainable for a few beads.

Digitized by Google

Finding that my number of visitors increased daily, from their gestures I imagined that it was about time for me to move, so on the fourth day, having a favourable breeze, I moved on through the innumerable patches and the many small islets to Jesu Maria, a larger island about ten miles distant, but on anchoring on the south side in a bay that was full of shoals, I found here, as everywhere else, the coast to be most thickly populated. The natives did not wait for me to anchor, but crowded the ship on all sides.

I now finally abandoned all hope of obtaining any further collections in natural history. My hunters on board were by this time so thoroughly frightened at the wild appearance of the natives, and my captain and crew were also becoming very dissatisfied at my remaining among such people, who outnumbered us to such an enormous extent, that the next day, amid the yells and frantic gesticulations of the natives in canoes all around me, I set sail for New Britain with a wind which obliged me to set my course towards La Vandola Island, situated twenty miles to the east of Jesu Maria and the most eastern island of the group.

The same evening I arrived under the cliff of that island, which is entirely different in formation to any of the others, being of circular form and having a coast line of straight up and down cliff. The natives came off to me in great numbers, and were very eager for me to anchor, but finding no bottom except on a lee shore, and that at some considerable depth, I merely laid to for an hour, bartering with the natives for a few spears and shell ornaments, and then before dark again set sail for the slightly more civilised country—New Britain.

Thus the great object of my journey to the Admiralty Islands had signally failed, and with the exception of a few hundred specimens of coleoptera and still fewer

Digitized by Google

butterflies and with but one bird, I turned my back on these wild people who possess a country so rich in a fauna unknown to European collectors.

But perhaps, one day, it may be my good fortune to return—and there is nothing I should desire more—taking with me a stronger force of arms, to enable me to remain some months in the group, and collect all the rare and new things I am confident are to be found there.

The following is a small vocabulary of Admiralty Island words I picked up from the natives whilst trading with them :—

Man—Babboo.
King—Babboo Mundrean.
Boy—Babboo Leem.
Woman—Bebbeen.
Come here, bring—Egami.
Go away—Tocalar.
Go away for good—Tocalarcol.
Large, big—Mundrean.
Small—Leem.
Spear—Pichelen.
Axe—Cimmel.
Knife—Kurt.
Beads—Wyap.
Cloth—Dreapp.
Good—Wyen.
Bad—Mooun.
Come—Aussei.
Island—Mook.
What is your name ? What do you want ? } Tocalager.
Let me look—Tocalessy.
Yes—Ou (resembling the hoot of an owl, and repeated three times).
No, don't want—Ebouen.
Throw it away—Kean.
Fish-hook—Mok.
Bow and arrow—Merrik.
Ship, boat, canoe—Colendral.
Wind—Ses.
Rain—Emballa.
It is here—Lockon.
Plenty—Solowan.
Here or there—Tedor.
This or that—Setu.
Present, gift—Couas.
Sleep—Mat mat.
Dead—Marti.
Tomahawk—Sawali.
Tortoise shell—Pijinbon.

The numbers are—

One—Esse.
Two—Ellour.
Three—Etal.
Four—Ayer.
Five—Elima.
Six—Aon.
Seven—Retalor.
Eight—Undralu.
Nine—Undressie.
Ten—Co.
Eleven—Co Esse.
Twelve—Co Ellour.

Digitized by Google

Thirteen--Co Etal.
Fourteen—Co Ayer.
Fifteen—Co Elima.
Sixteen—Co Aon.
Seventeen—Co Retalor
Eighteen—Co Undralu.
Nineteen—Co Undressie.
Twenty—Ellour Co.
Fifty—Elima Co.
One hundred—Co Co.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

I LEAVE THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS—WE ARE WRECKED ON A REEF OFF NEW IRELAND—RETURN TO NEW BRITAIN—CHINESE CARPENTERS REPAIR THE YACHT —THE HOT SPRINGS IN BLANCHE BAY—THE BOILING RIVER—THE BEEHIVES—EXPERT FEMALE DIVERS— I LEAVE FOR THE SOLOMON ISLANDS—CALL AT SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLANDS—I DISCOVER THE MURDER OF AN ENGLISHMAN—I PHOTOGRAPH THE ASSASSINS—STORY OF A WHITE MAN SWEPT AWAY IN A BOAT AND KILLED AND EATEN BY NATIVES— AN ACTIVE VOLCANO—BOUGANVILLE—DANGEROUS NATIVES—THE CANNIBAL WHO WANTS A SOVEREIGN —H.M.S. "RAPID" PUTS ME IN QUARANTINE—IVORY NUTS—I START FOR AUSTRALIA—ANOTHER ACCIDENT —RETURN TO THE SOLOMONS—H.M.S. "WALLAROO" —THE YACHT CONDEMNED—I LEAVE FOR AUSTRALIA IN THE MAN-OF-WAR.

FROM here I had a fine wind in my favour, the first I had experienced for some months, which brought me down to New Britain in two days, where I again anchored in Blanche Bay. The settlers were very pleased to see me again, having all made up their minds long ago that I had been killed and eaten by the natives of the islands I had just left. Losing no time here, I at once paid a visit to the head Government official at Herbertsoh to get the necessary permission to recruit more natives

Digitized by Google

to hunt for me in the Solomon Islands, where I was now bound, as my contract with the people I had expired on my returning to their country, and none of them were desirous of re-engaging.

Receiving the necessary permit I at once ran over to Kuras, a large village on the New Ireland coast opposite Blanche Bay, the reason for this being that after our experiences in the Admiralty Islands, and the intense fear of my New Britain hunters while there, I should have stood no chance whatever of getting any others from that country.

Arriving in Kuras harbour on the following afternoon, I anchored a mile from the shore. A great many of the natives who came off in their canoes told me I should find a better anchorage inside the reef, whereupon I decided to shift my position, getting the advantage of a better shelter. Soon after the anchor was hauled up and the captain had given the order to go about to enable us to clear the reef, the wind fell light, and the ship missing stays, the current, which was very strong, swept us immediately on to a coral reef before there was time to let go the anchor again. Luckily the tide was low, and so I knew it was only a matter of a few hours before getting off again, provided she held together until there was enough water to float her. Owing to a big sea running at the time, the ship suffered very considerably, at one moment high up on the crest of a wave, only to be dashed down again with terrific force on to bed rock. All our crockery and glass was smashed, fittings and furniture were dashed to pieces down below. Hundreds of natives swarmed the beach, perhaps hoping—who knows?—that the vessel would soon break up, when we should all fall an easy prey to them. My greatest fear was that they would attack us even before the ship became a total wreck, and I conceived the idea of passing a tow-line to the shore

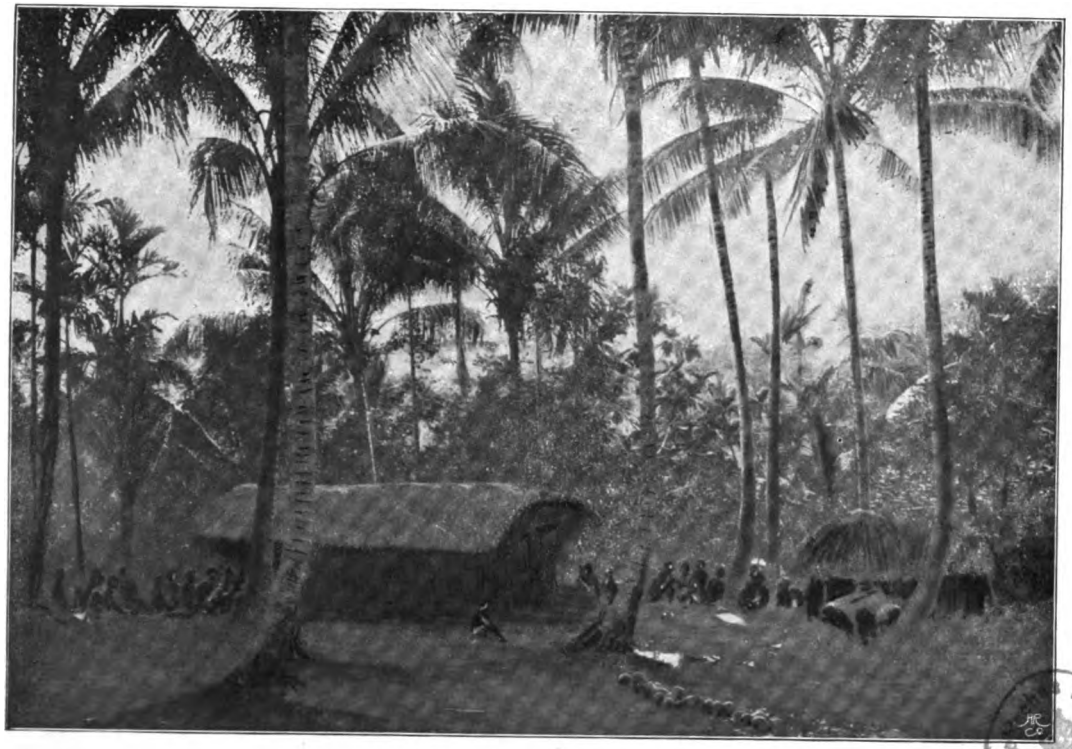
Digitized by Google

requesting them to haul away, and thus I kept them fully occupied, and from planning any mischief. At about ten o'clock at night, and after we had been bumping in a terrible manner for about five hours, the tide rose sufficiently for us, with the aid of two kedge anchors, to get her off into deep water, and to my great joy we discovered that she was not making very much water. Unfortunately the rudder gudgeons were broken, and the rudder casing a great deal damaged, a very considerable mishap. I found it quite impossible to induce any one to come away with me after this, so immediately we had temporarily fixed up the steering gear by the aid of wire rope, I returned to New Britain. This, however, was not so easily accomplished, owing to the strong south-east wind, and the current which accompanies it.

After two days' hard struggle I fetched the north coast of New Britain, and anchored off the Wesleyan Mission Station situated there. An hour or two after starting the next morning, the ropes holding the rudder broke, owing to the terrible strain and chafe upon them, and for some hours we were drifting, until my men fixed them as before, by no means an easy task with such a big sea running. Two days afterwards we successfully weathered the point by the volcano, and anchored off the Ralum plantation.

Finding no one here able to be of any service to us, we moved down the bay to the island of Matupi, where there was a Chinese carpenter living, who at once took the vessel in hand, and did his best to repair the damage done. Unfortunately, there were but two or three feet rise and fall here, and so we were obliged to take everything out, even to the ballast, to lighten the ship sufficiently, so that the men could work at low water. A great many sheets of copper had been

Digitized by Google

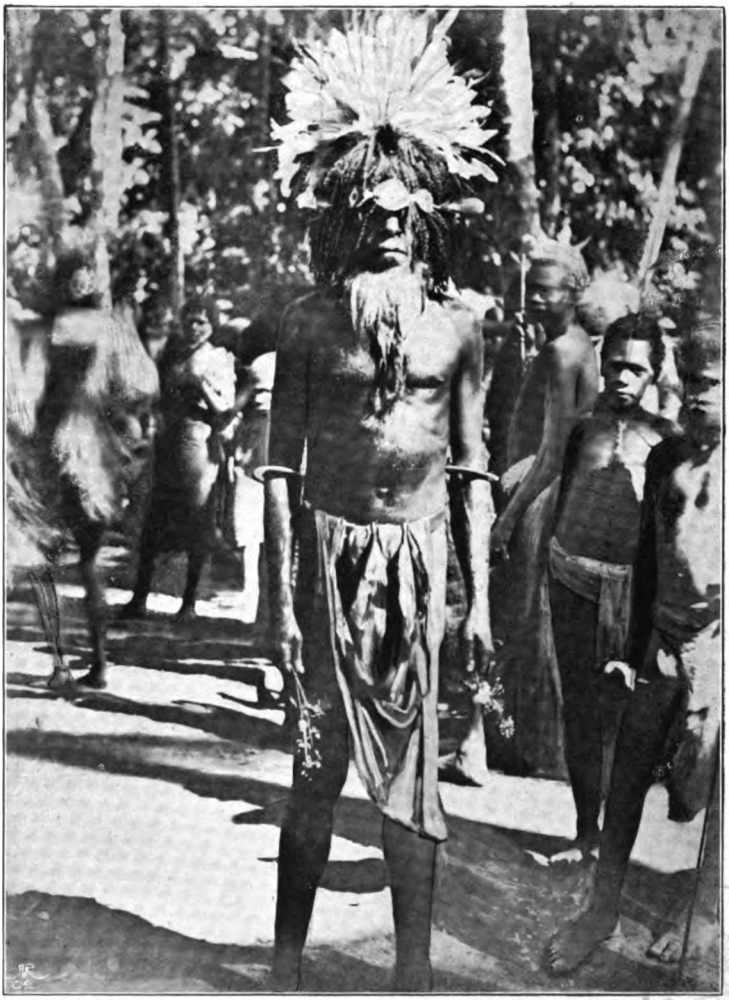


A TYPICAL VILLAGE IN THE INTERIOR OF NEW BRITAIN.

Amt-Bibliothek
Hydrogra
K.u.k. Kriegs-Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



A NEW BRITAIN GIANT 6 FEET 3 INCHES IN HEIGHT.

Hydro-Kr.u.k.Kriegs Marine-Bibliothek

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

torn off on the reef, and a considerable amount of damage done to the stern-post. After working for some days the men declared it to be impossible to repair her thoroughly, on account of our inability to beach her; and so I made up my mind to make my way as best I could against the south-east monsoon now blowing in full force, to Australia beating down through the Solomon Islands, and from whence I should be able to make the Queensland coast in one board.

Whilst waiting here for the ship to be ready for sea, I made many expeditions into Blanche Bay, and collected many interesting specimens. On one occasion I went for some miles to the head of an inlet, where I was told I should find some hot springs; and after navigating a river running into the bay for some mile or two, the water commenced to be warm, and the further I went the hotter it became, until at last it was impossible for me to hold my hand in it. Then I could see steam bubbling up in all directions about me, proving that beneath the water there was some very great volcanic disturbance.

The scenery here was very beautiful, and the trees which overhung the river most luxuriant, but the heat was so intense that I was glad to get out into the cool again. I luckily had my camera, and so with the aid of one of my black boys, whom I had already taught to squeeze the ball, I managed to secure a photograph, which in some small degree pourtrays the beauty of the scene.

On my way home I made a slight detour to inspect some rocks I had seen in the distance, and which have been named the Beehives. On approaching them I found these were two in number, and of sandstone formation. Springing straight up perpendicularly from the sea, they are clothed from head to foot with most luxuriant vegetation, have deep water right up to their very base, rise to a height of about 220 feet, and are, I should

Digitized by Google

say, about eighty yards in circumference, and only separated from one another by a few feet of water. There is a small ledge of coral at the base of one of them, and on it a village has been built, populated by fully three hundred people, who subsist almost entirely on fish. On my arrival the young girls and women clambered up to a small projection thirty or forty feet above the water, and immediately jumped off, claiming a stick of tobacco for the accomplishment.

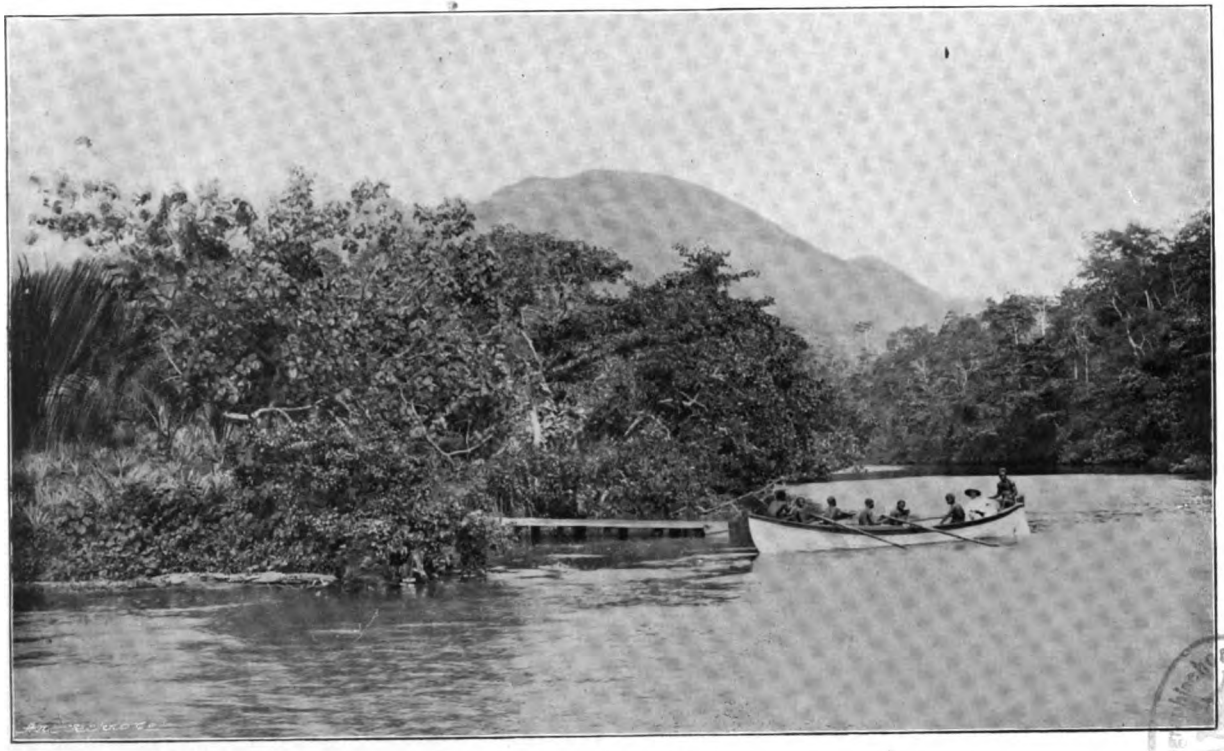
I was sorry not to be able to take a photograph of these remarkable rocks, but the sun had long since sunk below the horizon, and the lights from the torches of the natives fishing on the reefs round the bay were beginning to show up in all directions.

On another occasion I visited the village of Nordup, on the North Coast of New Britain, for the purpose of reconciling two old warriors who had been at loggerheads with one another for years, their villages joining. After a deal of persuasion I got them together, and, placing a green palm-leaf of peace between them, got a photograph, afterwards giving a copy to each, at the same time obtaining a promise from them both that they would be brothers in the future.

When the Chinese carpenter had done what he was able, I quickly got my ballast on board and returned to Ralum, to bid a final adieu to all my friends there. And taking, at the request of Mrs. Kolbe, some provisions and papers for an Englishman who was trading for her in a group of islands just north of the Solomons, and who was apparently quite isolated from the world, being out of the track of all ships, I made an early start on May 11th.

Just as the anchor was being hauled up I perceived a boat coming off to me with a huge case on board, and found it to contain two cassowaries I had bought from

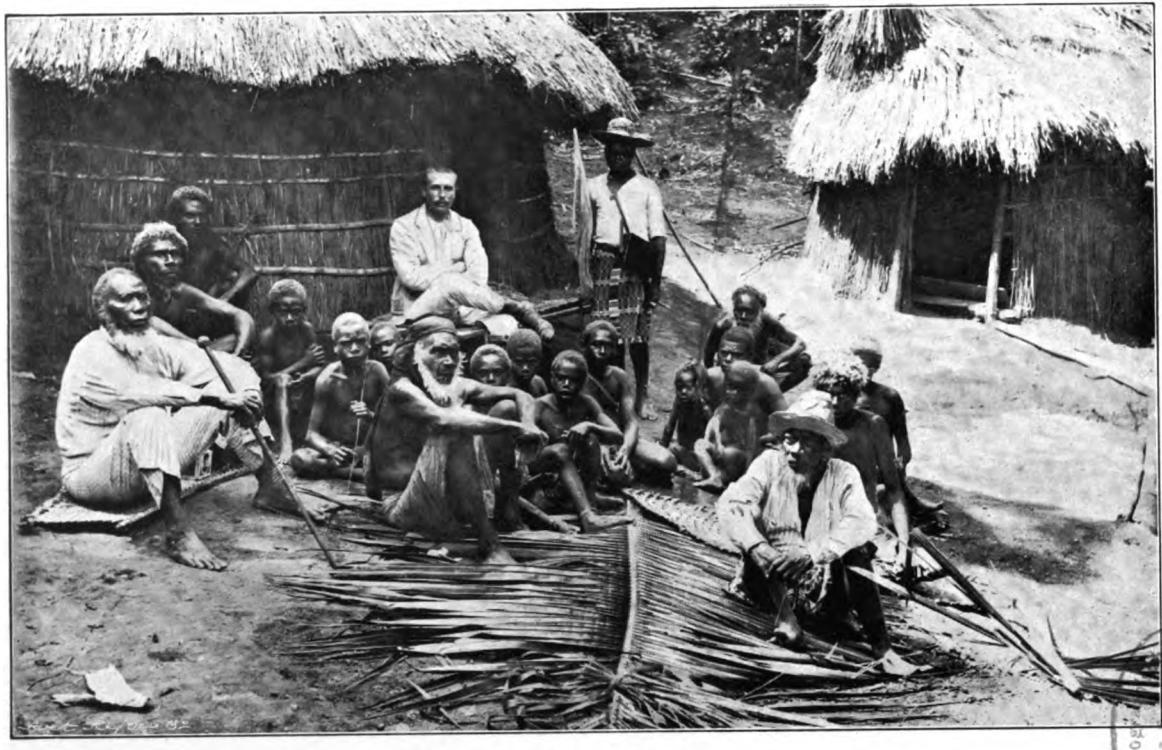
Digitized by Google



THE HOT SPRING, BLANCHE BAY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



THE TWO CHIEFS AT NORDUP.

Digitized by Google

k.u.k. Kriegs Marine-Hydrographisches Amt-Bibliothek-Pola

Digitized by Google

the natives, and in the hurry of departure had entirely forgotten.

A fair wind took us down the St. George's Channel and past the south coast of New Ireland, and then making an easterly course a few days brought me to Sir Charles Hardy Islands, lying some miles to the east of New Ireland.* These are densely wooded and rather low, surrounded by mangroves, but here and there there is a small sandy beach where it is possible to land. It was one of these on which the Englishman for whom I was taking the papers, &c., was living.

Sailing along the coast I soon afterwards observed a flag-staff raised up at the spit of a small island which I knew must be Nissam, the trading station; and so heading through a very narrow passage where the current was rushing like a mill stream, I was quickly taken to the back of the island, where there was a good anchorage and beach, and from which I could see the trader's house. But although the flag was flying I could see no one on the verandah, nor did any natives, as is customary, approach the ship from the shore. Nevertheless I could see many dusky figures running through the trees which line the beach and at once remarked that something must be wrong. Firing a gun two or three times, but getting no response, I manned the boat and went on shore when my worst fears were at once realised.

The Englishman, whose name was Oliver Beavis, had been murdered. His native housekeeper, a young girl from New Ireland, whom I found huddled up in the house in a most terribly frightened condition, said that Mr. Beavis had been expecting a schooner to come from New Britain with his stores for some months. I may

* This group should in reality, according to my captain's observations, be placed five miles further to the east than their present charted position.

Digitized by Google

mention here that Mrs. Kolbe had previously told me that her schooner, when I left New Britain, was then more than a hundred days overdue, and they were themselves very anxious for her safety, as the natives on the east coast of New Ireland, where it had been sent, were very treacherous, and that was the reason why she had not been able to send this man his stores before.

Whether the natives imagined that he had been completely deserted by his fellow-creatures or not, it is hard to say; but one morning, when he was in the act of stooping to pick up something from the ground, thirty yards from his house, they had crept up behind him, and with one of his own axes, stolen from the verandah, had struck him down. I at once sent for the chief of the island, but he refused to come, nor all the threats and inducements I afterwards sent would cause him to alter his decision, and, consequently, I never saw him at all.

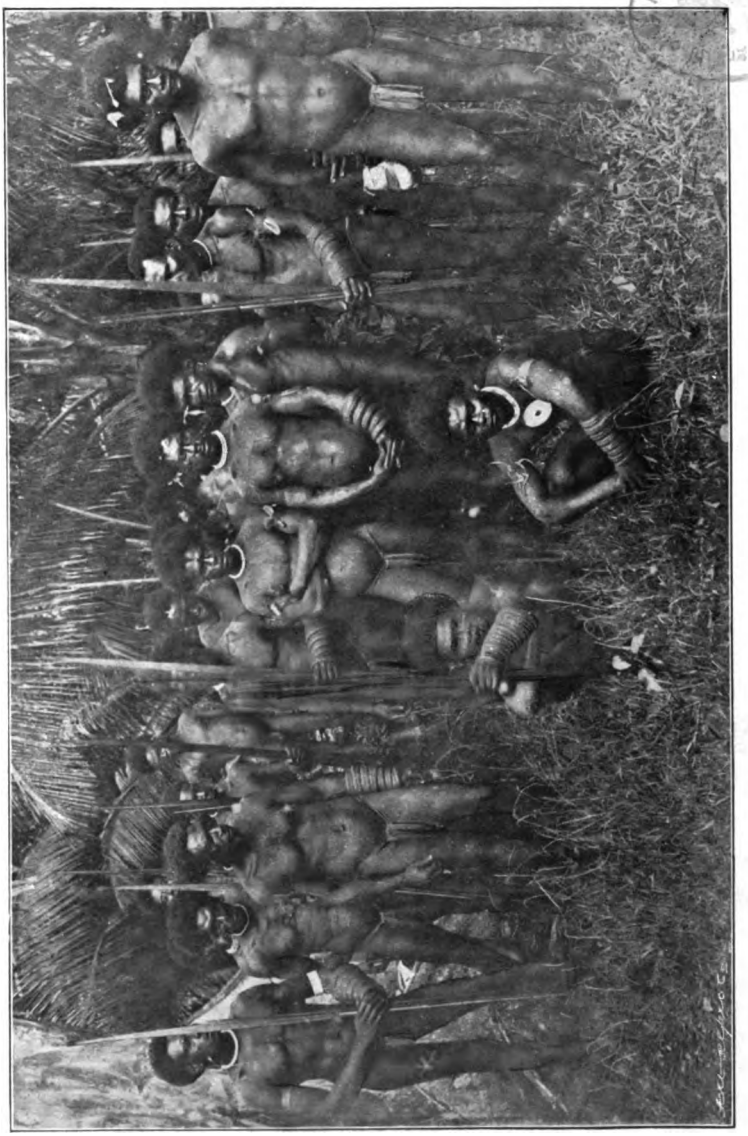
Gathering as many natives as possible together I interrogated them, finding that pidjin English was not unknown to several, with the result that I discovered that one morning, ten days previous to my coming, the trader was in the act of feeding his pigs, when a native had split his head open with an axe from behind. The poor man had strength enough to run behind a cocoanut tree, followed by his assassin, who was then joined by other natives. Taking out his revolver he fired twice, wounding one man in the hand and another in the shoulder. The trader's New Ireland boys then appeared on the scene, and the murderer decamped, but was afterwards shot by one of these boys with the trader's own gun, and close to the spot where he had struck down his victim. Mr. Beavis managed to stagger to his house, but fell on the threshold and expired before he could get upon his bed. I could see the ghastly signs of the frightful struggle the poor man had made in trying to get there, but his strength

Digitized by Google

NISSAM, A TRADING STATION.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



NATIVES OF NISSAM WHERE OLIVER BEAVIS WAS MURDERED.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

had given way, and he had died pulling at the bedclothes. One can hardly imagine such a gruesome scene as the one I looked upon, for although ten days had elapsed nothing had been touched.

The New Ireland boys buried the body just outside, and so, after seeing that his grave was properly attended to, and a bamboo fence built round it, I examined his papers to try and discover his address, so as to give intimation of the sad occurrence to his friends. Unfortunately, I could find no letters that told me what I wanted, but just as I was giving it up I saw in the corner of his room a small and much-used Bible, wherein I found his address in the Isle of Wight. I communicated with his friends on my arrival in Australia in July, while, at the same time, I wrote to New Britain, sending news of the murder.

Before letting the natives depart I sent on board for my camera, and, with two rifles on either side of it, took a photograph of them; this they seemed very loth to allow, never having seen the apparatus before, and evidently imagining it might go off at any moment and kill them all.

The natives of these islands are a very fierce race of people; much above the average height, they appear to be very powerful and muscular, bold and daring. They wear no clothing, not even the T bandage, customary in the Solomon Islands. My photographs have been draped since. Their only weapons appeared to be bows and arrows, and on their right arm they wear a guard against the bow-string consisting of a creeper which they unwind from the stem of the tree on which it grows, and dry for their use: it forms a kind of gauntlet from the wrist to the elbow. I discovered them to be very expert in the use of the bow, for, wishing to divert their attention as much as possible from myself, I caused a thin bamboo stick, about two inches in circumference, to

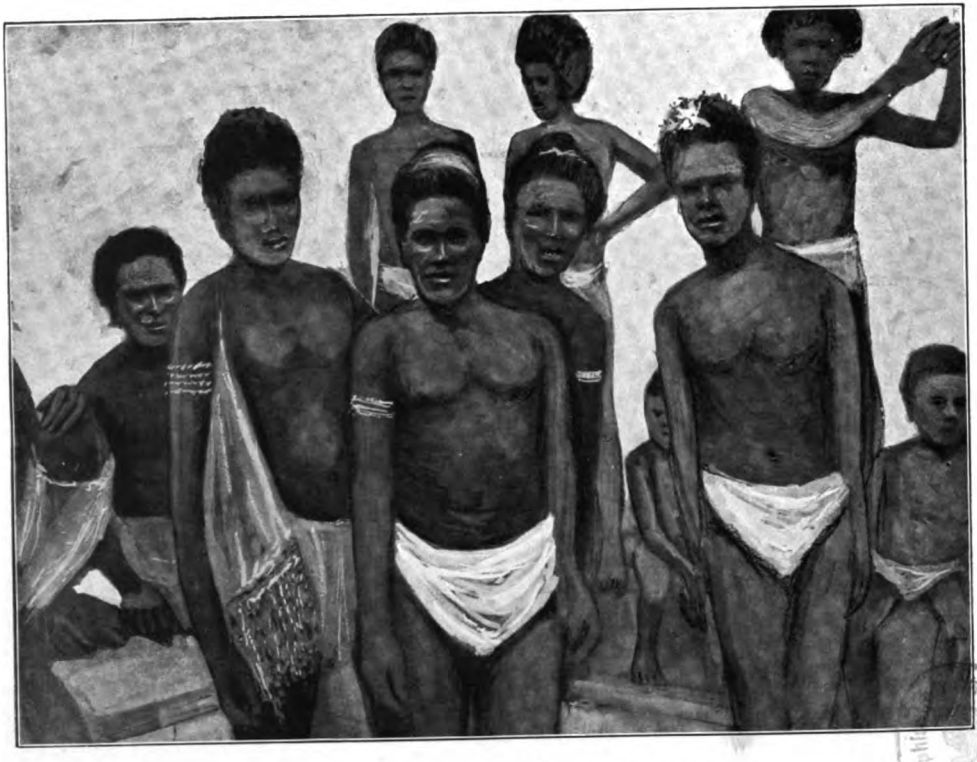
Digitized by Google

be driven into the sand, giving a stick of tobacco to every one who could split it with an arrow at a distance of forty paces ; in this way I got rid of a great deal of tobacco in the afternoon, one man in particular, splitting it every time. The arrows which these people use are not unlike those made by the Solomon Islanders, but are considerably better made—barbed with small pieces of human bone and pointed with the same material, they are very formidable weapons—and if a native is struck by one in leg or arm it is quite impossible to withdraw it, and the only way he has of freeing himself is by driving it right through to the other side.

The next morning, the tide being in our favour, at six o'clock I turned my back upon the scene of this horrible and atrocious murder, another being added to the already long list of such crimes which have been and are being daily enacted throughout the South Seas, where the lonely, hardworking trader ekes out a solitary livelihood and spends the greater part of his life living alone, outside the pale of civilisation without friends and far, far away from home.

As we were being swept through the passage by the fierce current running at the time, the native who was on board to pilot us clear of the coast, told me how, a year or so ago, a white man had arrived in a ship to stay with the trader until the schooner returned a year afterwards. But as the tide was running out at the time the ship did not attempt to enter the passage but just stood off and on until the man had been lowered in his boat with his four boys and then sailed away. The white man had never been able to reach the shore although when the ship left him he was not a mile distant from it. But the next morning he was nowhere to be found, and it was afterwards discovered that the current in the night had swept him right across to the east coast of New

Digitized by Google



GROUP OF WOMEN, SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLAND.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MEN AND WOMEN, SIR CHARLES HARDY ISLAND.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Ireland, where he had been killed and eaten by the natives, his boys sharing a similar fate.

After leaving Sir Charles Hardy Islands I laid along the coast of Bougainville, one of the largest and northernmost islands of the Solomon Group, being nearly one hundred and twenty miles in length and over thirty in width. Sailing down the coast we perceived high up in the sky flames issuing from the summit of an active volcano, and although we must have been some thirty or forty miles distant it was plainly visible. There is a range of mountains which appears to run nearly the entire length of this island, and I should say, judging from our position, some of the highest peaks were several thousand feet above the sea level. I could see many volcanic cones but only the one I have just mentioned appeared to be active. The villages along the coast appeared to be very thickly populated, but the ferocity of their inhabitants is very well known, and it would be very difficult indeed for a white man to make an expedition through the island with safety. Towards the southern end of the island one or two large war canoes came out to us as we went along, each one containing about twenty men, who, like the Sir Charles Hardy islanders, were completely naked and very dark in colour. Their faces were tattooed in lines, imparting a very fierce and repulsive appearance.

On the third day we reached Treasury Island and ran into a very good anchorage off the principal village. The natives, who have a very good reputation here, many having worked on the plantations in Queensland, but the greater number engaging themselves at different times as boats' crews to the traders of the Solomon Islands, swarmed on board immediately I let go the anchor. One of the first to arrive was a boy who went by the name of Tom, whom I immediately remembered as having

Digitized by Google

previously met before at Rubiana when on my previous expedition. He was very anxious to come away with me, as indeed were a great many of them, and I received a great many presents of yams, taros, and kaukaus—a vegetable not unlike a potato. One man who spoke pidjin English fairly well begged me very hard for a sovereign, and when I offered him a shilling turned up his nose in disgust. Had he received what he wanted I

A NATIVE OF BUKA, SOLOMON ISLAND.

am sure I cannot conceive what he would have done with it, except that perhaps on the arrival of the first trading schooner, he, like many other returned labour hands from Queensland with money, would have parted with it for a few beads or a stick or two of tobacco.

The chief, who was the son of a celebrated warrior named "Mula Copa," long since dead, paid me a visit in the afternoon and brought me a very fine spear as a

Digitized by Google

present, and receiving in return some cotton red and tobacco, for it is always customary in every country throughout the South Pacific to give presents and receive something in exchange on an acquaintance being made.

Immediately my water tanks were replenished we set sail again, but owing to the very light winds that prevailed it was many days before we reached Rubiana, where most of the English Solomon Island traders form their head-quarters. A fair wind springing up, we were about to run over the bar, which extends across the entrance of the lagoon, when a sail was reported on the starboard bow. This turned out to be H.M.S. *Rapid*, which quickly bore down upon us, and ascertaining as she steamed close under our stern that I had come from New Britain, at once sent off a boat with an official order from the High Commissioner of the Western Pacific, prohibiting any communication whatever with any one for twenty-one days, owing to the fact that smallpox had broken out in the country I had just come from. Notwithstanding the fact that I had not been within two hundred miles of the infected district I was requested to remain outside the bar, so I went and anchored off Rendova Island.

Before they steamed away I had a short and shouting conversation with Mr. Woodford, who was on board and who had just been appointed to the post as Commissioner of the Solomon Islands. I had met this gentleman previously in England. He cordially invited me to pay him a visit at Gavatu, an island off the coast of Florida, one of the southernmost in the group; but being in a hurry to get across to Australia I told him I should be unable to do so, little thinking at the time that force of circumstances would compel me to go there, and that my ship, which had been my home for so long, was fated to remain there for ever. Shortly afterwards we said goodbye, and an hour or so later they disappeared beneath the horizon.

Digitized by Google

The next morning I found it necessary to again repair the steering gear, and it was very difficult to make the natives who were continually crowding round us understand that we were in quarantine and that they were not to come on board, as being of a friendly disposition they are in the habit of boarding every ship they come in contact with. It was also very hard upon me as it had been more than six months since I had seen an Englishman or heard any news of my own country, and I was now within a mile or two of several living just inside the lagoon, to whom a regular bi-monthly mail arrives and from whom I should have been able to have learned what was going on in the world.

These traders, who have established quite a little colony here, would, I know, have been very glad to see me. To Englishmen living at home and knowing nothing whatever of South Sea life and natives, except from an occasional glimpse of a print or photograph, picturing shady palms, glassy seas, and sandy beaches, the life of a trader would appear a very enviable one. But from what I saw of the different traders who have been established in these latitudes for many years I should say that it is, as a rule, not so profitable as the uninitiated imagine. The life is one of extreme loneliness, monotonous to a degree, and terribly harassing to the nerves.

There are several men earning their livelihood by collecting and selling native products in the Solomon Islands. Of those I met, Mr. Wickham, of Rubiana, and Mr. Nielson, of Florida, appear to be the most prosperous; but from one and all I experienced the utmost courtesy and hospitality. They invariably live on some small island, considering it to be more safe than the mainland.

Amongst the many articles of trade thus collected is the ivory nut, which is about the size and appearance of an ordinary apple, with the depressions where the stalk

Digitized by Google

and the opposite indentation are accentuated. The tree from which this nut is taken grows in low and swampy ground and takes a great many years to mature. The trees are cut down and the nuts gathered and put into bags, each tree yielding about six of these bags full. On the outer skin being removed the kernel has an appearance of a large-sized billiard ball. It is as hard as ivory, and will retain any dye. After being dried they are exported to Europe and largely used in the manufacture of buttons, etc. The trade in ivory nuts has greatly decreased within the last few years owing to the depreciation of value, at one time being worth £10 per ton, but now only bringing, I believe, about £3.

Tortoise shell is also largely dealt with. It is the back of a turtle usually found on the reefs or on a sandy beach. The natives spear the turtles and, after eating the flesh, take off the blades and sell them to the trader in exchange for cloth, beads, or tomahawks.

Mr. Louis Becke's tales of South Sea life are very pleasant and poetical with the descriptions of beautiful coral reefs and waving palms; but when one looks upon those reefs and sees the overwhelming numbers of poisonous and stinging creatures indolently lying in wait for some unwary stranger, or when one finds some wild and ferocious cannibal with a long-handled native tomahawk or jagged stone club, or perchance even a poisoned arrow or two in his bow, behind that waving palm, the poetry somehow fades away and one's hand steals quickly and silently to the revolver so handily placed in the belt.

After a day or two I continued my journey, and had a fair wind as far as Russell Islands, which lie to the north-west of Guadalcanar, one of the larger islands further east. Many natives came off in canoes laden with yams, cocoanuts, and bananas; but before they reached us a strong wind sprang up and we saw no more of them.

Digitized by Google

On reaching Guadalcanar, an island about eighty miles long and having many volcanic cones amongst the mountain peaks, which rise up to an enormous height of about eight to ten thousand feet, I considered it advisable to anchor for the night in a harbour a little to the westward of Cape Hunter and fill up with water, as I intended this to be my furthermost point to the eastward before striking across to Australia. The south-east monsoon was blowing steadily now with slight easterly variations. I therefore calculated I could reach Sandy Cape on the Queensland coast, a distance of 1,200 miles away, on one board. There were very few natives in the village, and they did not interfere with us in any way.

The next morning I made the final start for Australia with a strong steady wind blowing east-by-south ; and by noon on the following day had covered a distance of 180 miles. An hour after this the captain informed me that the lower rudder gudgeon had again given way, leaving me no alternative but to turn back to Gavatu, the seat of government, where in all probability I might find some suitable beach on which to make further repairs. Just at this time also we found that she was making more water than usual, owing, as I suspected, to the terrible straining she had received.

Running up the Guadalcanar coast, and past the small island of Savo, I reached the island of Gavatu, and sailing round to the lee side with what joy I perceived the St. George's cross flying at the stern of a British man-of-war riding at anchor! I found it to be H.M.S. *Wallaroo* from Australia, commanded by Captain Pollard, R.N. My anchor had hardly touched the bottom when I received a visit from Mr. Woodford, who was very pleased to see me now that my period for quarantine had expired, but was grieved to hear of my mishap.

I then paid a visit to the captain of the man-of-war,

Digitized by Google

who, although he had arranged to leave for Australia on the following morning, most kindly offered to postpone his departure until his engineers and carpenters had paid the yacht a visit and repaired the damage.

Long before daylight Mr. Rowley, the navigating lieutenant, accompanied by another officer, came on board, and after a short deliberation and thorough examination came to the conclusion that the damage was irreparable. A survey was then called, and the ship condemned for all future sea service. Captain Pollard at once offered me a passage to Australia, which I gladly accepted, and quickly transhipping my personal luggage, and as many of my specimens and collections as possible, and leaving my captain and crew behind to pack everything and bring them over by the trading steamer, which was expected in about a month, we slowly steamed out of harbour, leaving for ever behind my home of the past two years; and I must confess to a very sad feeling as I saw the yacht's ensign dipped as we passed her for the last time.

Here, then, in this ignoble way, ended my cruise in the Southern Pacific, and looking back on it now, I feel that in spite of all the misfortunes attending it the scientific discoveries I had made repaid me tenfold for all the anxieties and dangers I had passed through, and the two years had certainly been the most interesting of my existence.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

STRANGE NATIVE CUSTOMS—METHOD OF COOKING FOOD —SALT WATER SOLD FOR THE INTERIOR—NATIVE FISH-HOOKS—DISEASE—NATIVES WITH MANY WIVES —YOUNG GIRLS WITH LARGE FAMILIES—TREACHEROUS PEOPLE—RELIGION—TOTAL EXTINCTION OF THE RACE—FINIS.

DURING my cruise I had many opportunities of studying many of the strange customs, manners, and habits of the different peoples whose countries I visited.

Yams, taros, native bananas, and bread-fruit form the principal food of the islanders of the South Pacific. Of course, those natives who live on the coast are furnished with large supplies of shell and other fish, with which the reefs and shallows abound, and many and various are the different methods used in capturing them. The pig is found everywhere, and is known in a great many places as "Captain Cook," presumably on account of its being that celebrated navigator who first imported them to those countries. But it is only on special occasions, such as on the return of a successful party of marauders, or the death of a chief, or perhaps a visit from a friendly tribe, that one is killed and eaten.

The method generally adopted for cooking food is by taking several stones about the size of small cocoanuts, and building them up into a mound-shaped edifice. A fire is kindled within, and the article then buried in the

Digitized by Google

ashes, the whole being covered with taro or banana leaves. In a very short time the food is thoroughly baked. In some countries where cooking utensils are used, in the shape of pots or pans, the food is generally boiled; and on the coast salt water is very much utilised, for the natives have discovered that the salt contained in it adds much to make their food more palatable. In some parts bamboos containing this commodity find their way for many miles into the interior, and command a high native price. In some instances, where the mountain people are on unfriendly terms with the natives of the coast, and where trading in anything else is, in consequence, not thought of, these bamboos are left beneath trees or at known spots in the forest, and those people for whom it is intended come down and fetch it away, leaving something, generally in the shape of food, but unobtainable near the coast, in exchange.

Cocoanuts are also eaten very extensively everywhere. The young nut contains about a pint of liquid which is always cool and refreshing. From the cocoanut tree itself some natives extract the sap, and fermenting it, manufacture an intoxicating drink. I found this to be an excellent substitute for yeast in bread-making, and it is used by every white man living in the South Seas in preference to hops.

Native-made articles differ very much in style and manufacture according to the countries to which they belong, but in most places exhibit a considerable amount of ingenuity and ability. The dresses in the Admiralty Islands are exceptionally well made, consisting of small shells, which are rounded, bored, and strung together in wonderful devices and patterns, in the shape of a small apron, and decorated at the bottom with many various coloured feathers, numerous cowrie and other shells, forming tassels, so that the noise they make chinking

Digitized by Google

together as the wearer moves along can be heard at a considerable distance. Fish-hooks are generally beautifully constructed. A piece of pearl shell is taken about two to four inches in length, and shaped like a fish. Several small notches are cut at one end, by which a piece of tortoise-shell already rounded and pointed to the fineness of a needle, is tightly strapped with native hemp. This barb is curved and pointed towards the shaft, and the whole of the construction is attached to a hemp-line, and trawled from the stern of a canoe, seldom or never failing to secure a large specimen of which the hook is but an imitation.

Scrofulous and venereal diseases are very prevalent. Pulmonary affections, ophthalmia, elephantiasis, leprosy, and many skin diseases are common, and are amongst the principal ailments with which the natives of the South Sea Islands are afflicted. In many instances sores and ulcers so invariably neglected increase to such an extent that in time the limbs rot and fall off. In one case that came under my personal observation the man's right leg had literally melted away, and when I saw him he had little or none of it left, but wherever he went a darkish fluid stained the ground.

Polygamy is practised everywhere, and wives are bought and sold like so much property. Young girls mature at a very early age, and often are the possessors of large families before they attain their seventeenth year.

There are, naturally, a great many different characteristics where a race is so mixed as in these islands. In some countries they are treacherous to a degree, obtrusive and intractable, whilst in others, perhaps only a few miles distant, they are at once friendly, easily dealt with, and even genial in their relations with you. The kidnapping and its attendant atrocious cruelty, a few years ago practised by, I am sorry to say, my own countrymen, who

Digitized by Google

ATTACKED.

Amt-Bibliothek
Hydrogr. Amt
K.u.k. Kriegs Marine

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

recruited labour in these parts, has even to-day never been forgotten by these wild but simple people, and has very often, and I am afraid will yet again result, in many savage reprisals, for revenge in the heart of a South Sea Islander is every bit as much looked forward to as it is in the majority of countries in Southern Europe. Nevertheless, even in parts where the white man had never set a foot before, and the people therefore could not be incensed by any wrongs, imaginary or otherwise, I found them here as elsewhere, of a bloodthirsty and treacherous character, never to be trusted for a moment, and always on the look out for an opportunity, no matter how long they have to wait for it, when they can strike unawares.

It is astonishing that among a people showing little or no civilisation the rights of one man are religiously respected by another, and a native owning anything, be it a cocoanut tree or an implement, has only to put his mark upon it to secure it from the hands of any covetous person.

In countries where the people have been recruited for plantations, and have lived for some years amongst the white men, theft is sometimes indulged in; but in every case, when discovery is made, heavy punishment is inflicted by the chief of the village.

Religion they have none; nevertheless there is a belief in every country of the existence of some evil spirit, and wherever I went I found that this superstition was a source of absolute terror to every one.

In conclusion, I am perhaps sorry to say that in my opinion those Polynesians inhabiting the far-away islands of the South Seas will die out as the Malay and Chinese races extend, and if the flow of colonisation should move towards New Guinea there can be no doubt but that the Papuan race inhabiting that vast country will, like the aborigines of Tasmania and Australia, fade away.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX I.

A CHAPTER ON THE BIRDS COLLECTED DURING CAPTAIN WEBSTER'S TRAVELS IN THE PAPUAN ISLANDS.

By Ernst Hartert,

Director of the Zoological Museum at Tring.

(This chapter has for its subject all the birds collected, with the exception of the Birds of Paradise, a list of which will be given by the Hon. Walter Rothschild, the principal authority on Birds of Paradise.)

I.—On the Birds collected in German New Guinea.

The collection made during Captain Webster's first expedition to German New Guinea was, except for some fine Birds of Paradise, not very large, consisting as it did almost only of larger forms.

Among the "Hawks" there was a skin of the rare *Megatriorchis doriae* (Salvad. and Alb.). As it was, however, a young individual, it cannot be said with certainty if it agrees in all details with birds from other parts of New Guinea. Its measurements are like those of the type. Another specimen has been collected at Lolebu on the river Bumi by Mr. Geisler (*J. F. O.*, 1892, p. 255).

Of "Parrots" the large black Cockatoo, *Microglossus aterrimus* (Gm.) was found to be not uncommon.

Of *Geoffroyus* both *orientalis* and *jobiensis* were shot, and the large *Eclectus pectoralis* was also found, as well as *Lorius erythrothorax* and *Eos fuscata*. The specimens of *E. fuscata* from German New Guinea have been separated under the

Digitized by Google

name of *incondita*, but they cannot be distinguished from those of other parts of New Guinea.

The rarest Parrot, and indeed the most interesting of all the captures of birds made by Captains Webster and Cotton, is a skin of *Cyclopsittacus duivenbodei* (Dubois). It was shot near Stephansort on November 18th. The interest attached to this specimen lies in the fact that its exact home was formerly unknown. Now, however, we believe that this parrot is spread all along the northern coast of New Guinea from Stephansort to at least Walckenaar Bay, for the skins which have come with Dutch New Guinea trade skins have certainly not been procured in the German colony. (Compare Mr. Rothschild's note in *Novitates Zoologicae*, vol. i. p. 677.)

Of *Cuculidae* the large *Nesocentor menebeki*, belonging to the *Centropinae*, which build nests themselves and hatch their eggs like other birds, but unlike the true *Cuculinae*, which are parasitic, as everybody knows of our own Cuckoo.

The family of "Kingfishers" is plentiful in New Guinea, and especially conspicuous is the genus *Tanysiptera*, or Racket-tailed Kingfishers. In German New Guinea only *T. meyeri*, with an almost white tail, was found.

The large-billed, very bright, but not beautiful *Sauromarptis gaudichaud* was also shot. It can, in our opinion, not be separated from *S. kubaryi*, which we consider as only a nominal, but not real species.

Nothing of special interest of the large order *Passeres* was procured, but both Ant-Thrushes, *Pitta novaeguineae* and *P. mackloti* were collected, as well as *Mino dumonti*, *Melanopyrrhus orientalis*, *Gymnocorax senex*, and many *Cicinnurus regius* and other Birds of Paradise, a list of which is appended by Mr. Rothschild.

The collection of "Pigeons" is rather rich. There are several of the beautiful green pigeons of the genus *Ptilinopus* or *Ptilopus*, and the long-tailed *Megaloprepia poliura*. Of the large Fruit-Pigeons, *Carpophaga rufiventris*, *zoeae*, and *spilorrhoa* were obtained, and the large *Goura beccarii* was also shot.

"Waterfowl" were not met with in numbers, to judge from the collection, but the fine duck, *Tadorna radjah*, was found to be common.

Digitized by Google

Several small birds were also preserved in spirits, and these were found to be of much service for anatomical purposes. Skeletons of some are in the Tring Museum.

II.—List of the Birds collected on the Aru Islands.

The following list has been published in *Novitates Zoologicae*, vol. iii. pp. 534–536, but the numbers 44 and following have now been added, as they were sent in spirits and were not received when the list was published. Of some of the small birds, specimens were sent in spirits, the skeletons of which are mostly preserved in the Tring Museum.

1. *Paradisea apoda*, L. One *female*. "Iris pale yellow."—2. *Aeluroedus melanotis*, Gray.—3. *Cicinnurus regius* (L). The Aru skins do not differ perceptibly from those of other countries, though on the whole the wing is a few millimetres longer. (W.R.).—4. *Manucodia atra* (Less).—5. *Macrocorax fuscicapillus* (Gray).—6. *Mino dumonti*, Less. White bar in the wing rather narrow.—7. *Oriolus flavocinctus* (King).—8. *Dicruropsis carbonaria* (Müll.). Wing 147 mm.—9. *Graucalus caeruleogriseus* (Gray).—10. *Graucalus melanops* (Lath.).—11. *Artamus leucogaster* (Valenc.). Two specimens with remarkably short wings.—12. *Cracticus quoyi* (Less.).—13. *Cracticus cassicus*.

14. **Rhectes analogus**, A. B. Meyer, or **R. aruensis**, Sharpe.

In *Zeitschr. f. ges. Orn.* i. p. 285 (1884) Dr. A. B. Meyer separated some Aru specimens from *R. analogus* under the name of *R. aruensis*. The skin before us seems to agree with Meyer's birds, but Dr. R. B. Sharpe in *Ibis*, 1888, p. 437, declares that Meyer's *R. analogus* is only the young of his *R. aruensis*. See also Salvadori, *Agg. Orn. Papuasia*, ii. p. 97 (1890).

15. **Rhectes ferrugineus brevipennis** (subsp. nov.)

Aru specimens have the wing very short, only 128 mm. All individuals of our very large series from New Guinea have the wings decidedly longer. A. B. Meyer, in *Zeitschr. f. ges. Orn.* i. p. 285 (1884), had already pointed out this difference,

Digitized by Google

and it is only on account of his corroboration of our observation that we dare to bestow a subspecific term on this form.

16. **Philemon novaeguineae aruensis**, A. B. Meyer.

Four skins from Dobbo, unfortunately not sexed. One of these, probably an old *male*, has a very long bill and a very high hump. These four birds have the bill 46, 46, 48, and 53 mm. long; their height at hump is 18, 19, 20, and 24 mm. Three specimens of *Ph. novaeguineae subtuberosus* (*antea*, p. 238) have the bill 43, 45, 45 mm. long, and their height at hump is 14, 15, 17 mm.

17. *Pitta novaeguineae*, Müll. & Schleg.—18. *Macropteryx mystacea* (Temm.). Wings 222–224 mm.—19. *Podargus ocellatus*, Q. & G.—20. *Eurystomus australis*, Sw.—21. *Tanysiptera hydrocharis*, Gray.—22. *Halcyon sordidus* Gould. The loral spot cannot be called pure white, but has a distinct though faint buffy tinge. Wing 116 mm. See *antea*, p. 244.

23. **Syma torotoro tentelare** (subsp. nov.).

Females from Aru have the black spot on the head in or behind the middle of the crown about 15 mm. or more away from the base of the bill, while in specimens from Northern Dutch New Guinea this spot is generally larger and extends almost or quite to the base of the culmen. The *males* of the Aru form do not differ perceptibly from *S. torotoro typica*.

Specimens from Fergusson Island are rather dark below, but a young individual from Waigiu is similar in this respect. In one of the Fergusson *females* the head-spot is placed more backwards than usual, and thus it seems somewhat to point towards the Aru subspecies. According to Salvadori (*Orn. Papuasia*, i. p. 485) *females* from Naiabui in S.E. New Guinea resemble those of Aru, and therefore most likely belong to the same subspecies. Another species has been recently described as *S. megarhyncha* by Salvadori from the Owen Stanley Mountains.

The last form of the genus *Syma* is called *S. flavirostris* and inhabits North Queensland. In the *Catalogue of Birds*,

Digitized by Google

vol. xvii. p. 197, it is said to differ from *S. torotoro* in wanting the black mark along the tip of the culmen, and this statement has been made before. However, it is quite wrong, the fully adult *S. torotoro* never having any black mark on the culmen, a character peculiar to immature birds of *S. torotoro* only. On the other hand, I have not yet seen a *S. flavirostris* quite without a black mark, and I believe that even the most adult birds have it. In any case it is a bad character for distinguishing these species, the much lighter and more greenish colour of the upper parts being the best distinguishing character of the Queensland form. The subspecific name proposed above is the native name of the bird in Aru, as *Torotoro* is its name in Dorey.

24. **Sauromarptis gaudichaud** (Q. & G.).

No distinction from typical skins of New Guinea. There is certainly not more white on the back; on the contrary, some of our birds from New Guinea (we have now thirty-six without duplicates) show *more* white on the back. The blue of the rump of most of our Aru birds is rather dark, while it is certainly paler in most of the skins from S.E. New Guinea, but not constantly. The so-called *S. kubaryi* seems to differ in *no way* from *S. gaudichaud typica*.

25. *Sauromarptis tyro* (Gray).—26. *Microglossus aterrimus* (Gm.). Wing only 330 mm.—27. *Cyclopsittacus aruensis* (Schleg.).—28. *Trichoglossus nigrogularis*, Gray. Large and fine birds; wings 150, 152, 153 mm.

29. **Chalcopsittacus scintillatus** (Temm.).

The majority of the Aru specimens have the breast more washed with brown and have very dark orange stripes along the shafts of the feathers on the breast as well as on the hind-neck, but the British Museum possesses specimens from New Guinea that are just like our Aru skins. The plumage of the sexes and different ages of this bird are not yet properly known. Some birds (? *females*) have the rump distinctly bluish, some have no orange stripes at all.

Digitized by Google

30. **Eclectus pectoralis aruensis** (Gray).

Specimens from the Aru Islands have the tail in both sexes very prominently tipped with yellow. I do not find this so much in any other specimens from other localities. The Aru Island birds are also rather large (♂ wing 263–269), and I believe they can stand as a subspecies. Cf. Gray, *P. Z. S.*, 1858, p. 182; Salvadori, *Orn. Papuas*, i. p. 201.

Specimens from the Solomon Islands seem smallest of all, next coming those from Fergusson, New Ireland, New Britain.

31. *Ptilopus aurantiifrons*, Gray.—32. *Pt. wallacei* (Gray).—33. *Pt. superbus* (Temm. & Knip).—34. *Pt. iozonus*, Gray. "Iris yellow."—35. *Pt. coronulatus*, Gray. "Iris orange."—36. *Myristicivora bicolor* (Scop.).—37. *Carpophaga zoeae* (Less.). "Iris straw-colour."—38. *C. pinon* (Q. & G.). "Iris red; feet coral-red; bill greyish; naked space round eye red."—39. *Chalcophaps stephani*, Rchb. Hitherto, I believe, only doubtfully known from the Aru Islands.

40. **Macropygia**, sp.

There are before us four skins of a *Macropygia* from Dobbo and Wannambai. According to Salvadori's Catalogue of the Pigeons in the British Museum they would belong to *M. doreya* (Bp.), and Salvadori has identified the Aru specimens that came before him with the latter species. To us they seem to agree much better with *M. batchianensis*, and to be merely a form of that species with a less rufous chin and longer wings. The wings of the adult *males* measure 173–175 mm. From all we can see at present we must conclude that our Aru specimens differ from *M. doreya typica* and that they are nearer to *M. batchianensis;* further that *M. doreya*, *M. cinereiceps*, *M. griseinucha*, *M. batchianensis*, and *M. goldiei* are more or less connected by intermediate specimens and merely subspecies of one and the same species, but that a large material with exact localities will be necessary before one can come to definite conclusions about them.

Digitized by Google

41. *Baza reinwardti*, Müll. & Schleg.—42. *Haliastur girrenera*, Vieill.—43. *Nycticorax caledonicus* (Gm.).—44. *Alcyone pusilla* (Temm.).—45. *Monarcha guttulatus* (Garn).—46. *Arses aruensis*, Sharpe.—47. *Monarcha nitidus* (Gould).—48. *Rhipidura tricolor* (Vieill.).—49. *Gerygone palpebrosa* Wall.—50. *G. chrysogaster*, Gray.—51. *Myzomela nigrita* Q. & G..—52. *Microeca flavovirescens*, Gray.—53. *Cyclopsittacus melanogenys* (Rosenb.).—54. *Edoliosoma aruense*, Sharpe.—55. *Melilestes novaeguineae* (Less.).—56. *Graucalus hypoleucus*, Gould.

III. List of the Key-Island Birds.

Passeres.
- *Dicaeum keiense* (in spirits).
- *Cinnyris zenobia*, *C. theresia* (in spirits).
- *Zosterops uropygialis* (in spirits).
- *Graucalus melanops*.
- *Philemon plumigenis*.
- *Calornis metallica*.
- *Lalage karu*.
- *Pitta mackloti*.
- *Pachycephala rufipennis*.
- *Artamus leucorhynchus*.
- *Sphecotheres flaviventris*.

Parrots.
- *Eclectus pectoralis*.
- *Geoffroyus keiensis* ♀.
- *Nasiterna keiensis* (in spirits).

Pigeons.
- *Ptilinopus wallacei*, *P. xanthogaster*, *P. prasinorrhous*.
- *Macropygia keiensis*.
- *Geopelia maugeus*.
- *Carpophaga concinna separata*, Hart. This form of the well-known *C. concinna* was described from a skin in the Tring Museum. Capt. Webster has now sent two fine series, and a large series has come to hand from Mr. Kuehn. All these Key-Islands' skins agree in every detail with the type, and the Key-Islands' form is at a glance recognisable by

Digitized by Google

its snow-white abdomen, which is grey in the typical *C. concinna*. This pigeon is probably resident in the Key group of islands.

HAWKS. { *Astur albiventris.*
Pandion haliaetus leucocephalus.

SHORE-BIRDS. { *Lobivanellus miles.*
Himantopus leucocephalus.
Actitis hypoleucus.
Stiltia isabella.
Demiegretta sacra.

IV. LIST OF BIRDS FROM ETNA BAY AND TRITON BAY.

Collections from these parts of New Guinea are hardly ever received in this country, yet they are especially of interest, because many years ago the great Dutch naturalist, Salomon Müller, made collections there, and several forms were first described from these places. We were, therefore, glad to get any specimens from these parts, although the collection was, in consequence of the lawless character of the natives and the attack made on Captain Webster's party, which resulted in the loss of several lives, only small. The beautiful series of the true *Paradisea minor minor*, the small Papuan Bird of Paradise, was of value for comparison with the *P. minor finschi* from Kaiser Wilhelmsland, and the enormous *P. minor jobiensis*, Rothsch. from Jobi Island in Geelvink Bay.

Pitta novæguineae, Müll. and Schl. (No. 328.) Etna Bay. This fine, but common Ant-Thrush was also obtained at Simbang.

Rhectes cirrhocephala (Less.). (No. 297.) Etna Bay. The back is rather paler than in our skins from the northern coast of the N.W. peninsula of New Guinea.

Eupetes caerulescens, Temm. (No. 302.) Etna Bay. In British New Guinea this species is replaced by a closely allied form with black tips to the under tail-coverts.

Todopsis cyanocephala (Q. and G.). (No. 261.) This fairy-like little blue flycatcher was shot at Etna Bay.

Arses telescophthalma (Garnot). (No. 288.) Triton Bay.

Monachella mülleriana (Schleg.). (No. 263.) Triton Bay.

Digitized by Google

Rhipidura setosa (Q. and G.). (No. 270.) Triton Bay.

Gymnocorax senex (Less.). (No. 329). This curious large crow with its naked face, common in most parts of New Guinea, was shot at Etna Bay. Its iris is "pale blue."

Nesocentor menebeki (Less. and Garn.). (No. 291.) "Iris red." Triton Bay.

Tanysiptera nympha (Temm.). (No. 314.) Etna Bay. "Iris pale blue, feet and bill red."

Tanysiptera galatea (? subspecies). (Nos. 266, 289, 274.) Three specimens of this beautiful racket-tailed Kingfisher from Triton Bay are somewhat puzzling. In their dimensions they stand somewhat between *T. galatea* and *T. galatea microrhyncha*, the latter of which is only a poor subspecies, but generally recognisable by a smaller bill and mostly darker crown of the head. The latter character is also characteristic for *T. galatea rubiensis*, A.B. M., from Rubi on the south of Geelvink Bay. The colour of the crown, however, varies very much in this group, and there are in Mr. Rothschild's museum two specimens with much paler heads than fifteen others that I could compare. The exact place they came from is not known, but they probably form a distinct subspecies.

Halcyon nigrocyanea, Wall. (No. 327.) A male was shot at Etna Bay. "Iris light blue, feet and bill entirely black." The abdomen is deep blue in the male, white in the female, rufous in the young bird.

Lorius erythrothorax, Salvad. (Nos. 307, 302, 264.) Etna Bay and Triton Bay. The distribution of this species is interesting. It seems to occur all over the eastern parts of New Guinea, from German New Guinea, where Captain Webster also procured some specimens, to British New Guinea, and along the Fly River to Etna Bay and Rubi, south of Geelvink Bay. In the latter place specimens are slightly smaller and are called *L. erythrothorax rubiensis*.

Aprosmictus dorsalis (Q. and G.). (Nos. 271, 279, 217, 320.) Etna Bay and Triton Bay. "Iris orange. The old bird has the back blue, the young green."

Carpophaga rufiventris, Salvad. (No. 319.) "Iris orange. Bill black. Feet coral red." Etna Bay.

Megaloprepia puella (Less.). (Nos. 308, 306, 313, 290.) This

Digitized by Google

gay-coloured pigeon was shot at Triton and Etna Bays. It is well known in Western New Guinea, and is replaced by *M. poliura* in Jobi, Central and Eastern New Guinea.

Reinwardtoenas reinwardti griseotincta, Hartert. (No. 309.) Etna Bay. Iris yellow. Hartert in *Novitates Zoologicae*, vol. iii., p. 18, separated the New Guinea form of this long-tailed pigeon under the above name. Moluccan birds are lighter.

Ptilopus aurantiifrons, Gray. Etna Bay. Captain Webster had also obtained it on the Aru Islands. "Iris orange, feet coral, bill yellow."

Otidiphaps nobilis, Gould. (Nos. 317, 331.) "Iris orange, feet and legs yellow with red joints, bill red." Two fine specimens from Etna Bay. This species is found in Western New Guinea and Batanta.

Eutrygon terrestris (Gray). (No. 332.) "Iris yellow, bill black and white. Feet whitish." A fine skin from Etna Bay. Although not rare in Western New Guinea and Salawatti, good skins seldom reach this country.

Goura coronata (L.). This large crowned pigeon was also found at Etna Bay. It is the oldest known species of crowned pigeon, being already mentioned as a "large land fowl" in 1699 in Dampier's Voyage, in the third volume. Brisson (1760) and Edwards (1761) gave figures of it, and Linnaeus gave it the name *Columba coronata*.

Ptilopus pulchellus (Temm.). Etna Bay.

Phlogoenas rufigula (Puch. and Jacq.). (No. 273). One male from Triton Bay.

Megatriorchis (or *Erythrotriorchis*) *doriæ* (Salvad. and Alb.). Captain Webster obtained two specimens of this very rare species during his travels. One, evidently a young bird, was shot in German New Guinea. It is a large bird, with the wing about 330 mm. long, like the type, and the one described by Sharpe. It differs in having no black ear spot, in being buff on the underside with only narrow blackish brown shaft-lines, and apparently in being paler on the upperside. The other, evidently an adult bird, was shot in Etna Bay. It is very much smaller, having the wing only 290 mm. long, the tail 260, tarsus 85. In colouration it seems to agree with the type. It is either a male (the type having been a female) or a smaller

Digitized by Google

race. The similarity in colouration of this bird and *Henicopernis longicauda* is very striking. It reminds one of the case of *Pernis celebensis* and *Spizaetus lanceolatus* in Celebes, the former being an ally of *Henicopernis*.

V.—List of the Birds Collected on New Hanover.

This collection is especially interesting, as the ornithology of this island is practically unknown, and the scientific interest would have been still greater if more of the smaller forms had been sent. The present collection shows that the fauna of New Hanover is not fully identical with that of New Ireland and New Britain, but that there is a slight admixture of the fauna of the Admiralty Islands in New Hanover, although it is mainly, of course, the same as that of New Britain and New Ireland, with, apparently, a small number of specialised indigenous forms. The ornis of New Britain and New Ireland is not sufficiently known, and it is hardly possible at present to state definitely how far they differ from each other, as it must be remembered that the Rev. Brown's collections from these islands were mixed up, and had no original labels.* That the ornis of New Britain and New Ireland, though mainly the same, differs in some cases, is clearly shown by the *Pitta mackloti* and *Pitta novaehibernicae*, which replace each other in the two groups, and by other birds.

There are, besides the skins enumerated in the following list, some birds in spirits of wine, which are not yet all properly identified, but a superficial examination proved that they are either represented in skins also (such as *Loriculus tener*), or belong to the well-known forms of the Neobritannian group of islands. Two new species were discovered in New Hanover, and both I have named in honour of their discoverer.

Mino kreffti, Scl. (Nos. 523, 479, 524, 367, 365.) Expedition Bay, New Hanover.

Edoliosoma remotum, Sharpe. (Nos. 535, 415, 491.) Expedition Bay, New Hanover.

* There is also some uncertainty with regard to exact locality about the specimens collected by Mr. Goldie, in British New Guinea, but the fault in such cases is often not with the collector, but with those who did not instruct them sufficiently.—E. Hartert.

Digitized by Google

Graucalus sclateri, Salvad. (No. 508, ♀ No. 350 ♂.) Expedition Bay, New Hanover.

Pachycephala melanura, Gould. (Nos. 383, 404, 396.) New Hanover, two males and a female.

Pitta novaehibernicae (*sic*), Ramsay. Five skins (Nos. 531, 437, 338, 360, 480) marked partly "New Hanover," partly "Expedition Bay," agree very well with the description of Ramsay in the "Proceedings of the Linnean Society of New South Wales," vol. iii., p. 73, and are quite different from *P. mackloti*. It is strange that this excellent species should have been overlooked so long. Count Salvadori erroneously united it with *P. mackloti*, of New Guinea, on the ground that specimens from New Britain belonged to *P. mackloti*. In this statement he is quite right, but then New Britain is not New Ireland. *Pitta novaehibernicae* (spelt thus) differs widely from *P. mackloti* in having no black guttural patch, no black band separating the blue breast band from the scarlet abdomen, the chin and upper throat being much paler, the ear-coverts more distinctly bluish, the crown rather light. It resembles in colour *P. rufiventris* of the Moluccas, but differs at a glance by its larger size, which is like that of *P. mackloti*, its brighter red hind-neck and less uniform and less rufous brown crown.

On Banda Captain Webster obtained also a skin of *P. vigorsi*. This is said to live also on Timorlaut.

Macropteryx mystacea (Less). (Nos. 536, 439, 505.) Expedition Bay, New Hanover. Wings 8·75 to 8·9 inches in length. Specimens from New Guinea have generally longer, specimens from the Moluccas generally shorter wings.

Cacomantis websteri, Hartert, sp. nov. (Nos. 387, 392.) These two cuckoos do not agree with any of the known forms. One is evidently an adult bird, or nearly so. It is metallic fuscous grey above, more ashy on the head, more metallic brownish on the wings, tail glossy black with small white tips, remiges dark glossy brown with large buff spots on the outer webs, near the bases. *Entire under surface* uniform dark grey, including the under wing-coverts, which show only traces of rusty bars, and the under tail-coverts, which are sparsely, but distinctly, barred with rusty brown. "Iris and feet yellow,

Digitized by Google

bill brown." Wing 120 mm., tail 126, bill 18. The other specimen, evidently a young bird in first plumage, is everywhere barred and spotted with pale rusty rufous.

Alcyone websteri, Hartert sp. nov. (No. 422.) A kingfisher, shot at New Hanover, on February 20, 1897, proves to be a very fine new species.

Adult (sex unfortunately not determined): above, greenish blue, purer and more ultramarine on the back, rump and upper tail-coverts, as well as on the hind-neck, forehead duller, feathers of lores white with black tips. The feathers of the upper parts and sides of head and neck have, in fact, only wide blue tips, being black at base and whitish towards the utmost bases. Tail blue. Primaries and their coverts black, primaries whitish grey towards the bases on the inner webs. Secondaries black with broad blue edges to the outer webs. Under parts white with a very slight buffy tinge. Under tail-coverts deeper buff with blue tips. Sides of breast blue, flanks striped with blue and blackish; breast crossed by a blue band, which is slightly interrupted in the middle. A large longitudinal whitish buff spot on the sides of the neck, behind the ear-coverts. Bill and feet black. Wing 62, tail 43, bill 53 mm.

This very fine new kingfisher shows what an amount of work may still be done in New Hanover, and it makes the want of knowledge of its smaller birds still more felt.

Eurystomus solomonensis, Sharpe (Nos. 446, 571.) It is rather a surprise to find here, at New Hanover, again the bird described by Sharpe from the Solomons. Its bright blue tail, bright blue gular patch and red bill, without distinctly black tip, leave no doubt as to the fact. Only our birds have the head more green, but that may be due to the freshness of their plumage. Our birds are very fresh, and partly still in moult.

Lorius hypoenochrous, G. R. Gray. (Nos. 342, 355.) "Iris straw-yellow." New Hanover. This lory is spread from New Hanover to St. Aignan, and occurs also in the D'Entrecasteaux Group.

Trichoglossus flavicans, Cab. and Reichenow. (Nos. 336, 337.) This parrot is very much like *Trichoglossus cyano-*

Digitized by Google

grammus and *T. massena*, but the red is lighter, the green more olive. Captain Webster shot it in New Hanover.

Geoffroyus heteroclitus (Hombr. and Jacq.). (Nos. 339, 432, 510, 345, 539, 540, and one with the label lost.) All from New Hanover, Expedition Bay. The iris is straw-yellow. This species, besides frequenting New Britain and New Ireland, is also found on the Solomon Islands, but I am not aware of its being on record from New Hanover.

Hypocharmosyna subplacens (Scl.). (Nos. 534, 364, 537, 492, 527.) This series from New Hanover, Expedition Bay, is very nice, and the specimens agree with such from other localities. The species is well known in New Britain and British New Guinea, but is not, I believe, recorded from New Hanover.

Loriculus tener, Sclat. There is one skin (No. 438) of this rare little parrot, and one in spirits, both from New Hanover. It has been known only from the type in the British Museum and one in Canon Tristram's collection, both from Duke of York Island. Captain Webster's specimens have, like Canon Tristram's, yellowish bases to the feathers of the forehead. "Iris straw-colour, bill black."

Ptilinopus rivolii (Prévost and Knip). (Nos. 335, 366, 394, 429.) This pigeon is only known to inhabit the Duke of York Peninsula and New Ireland, from where Mr. Rothschild's museum has a number of skins. The specimens from New Hanover are exactly like others. The young bird has no white collar and no violet forehead.

Ptilinopus johannis, Sclat. (Nos. 397, 447, 465, 466, 390, 528.) This fine pigeon, which differs from *P. rivolii* and all other species of the genus by its uniform bright yellow band across the breast, was discovered by the naturalists of the *Challenger* in the Admiralty Islands, and has been figured in the great work on the voyage of the *Challenger*. It has now been found in numbers on New Hanover, at Expedition Bay. The young differs from the adult in the same way as that of *P. rivolii*. It is of interest to find two so closely allied species in the same island.

Ptilinopus insolitus, Schleg. (Nos. 341, 448, 526.) This peculiar green pigeon with its enormous bright red, hollow

Digitized by Google

knob at the base of the bill was found at New Hanover, Expedition Bay. Its iris is pale straw-yellow. It is known to occur on New Ireland, New Britain, and Duke of York Island.

Ptilinopus superbus (Temm and Knip.). (Nos. 348, 459.) This common, but pretty green dove was also shot at New Hanover.

Chalcophaps stephani, Rchb. (Nos. 349, 414.) New Hanover.

Phlogoenas johannae, Sclat. (No. 469.) One specimen shot at New Hanover on the 4th of March, 1897. Iris red.

Caloenas nicobarica (Linn.). (Nos. 430, 376, 498.) This wide-spread island-pigeon is also common at New Hanover.

Carpophaga rubricera, G. R. Gray. (Nos. 499, 457, and one without a number). This fine species, common at New Hanover, New Ireland, New Britain, and Duke of York Island, was shot at Expedition Bay, New Hanover.

It is quite inconsistent to acknowledge the genus *Globicera*, on account of its nasal knob, if *Oedirhinus* is not separated from *Ptilinopus*. That the latter is not possible to maintain is shown by *Ptilinopus granulifrons* Hart. on Obi Mayor, which differs only by its knobs. This is a case similar to that of the *Rhamphococcyx*, &c., of the Sunda Islands.

Myristicivora subflavescens (Finsch.) (Nos. 412, 431.) New Hanover. So far only recorded from New Ireland.

Macropygia (?) *spec. nov.* (*aff. carteretiae*). Nos. 504, 403, 452, 453, and 340 belong to a long-tailed pigeon, which is probably different from *M. carteretia*. They have about 5 to 10 mm. longer wings and their breast is more or less barred with blackish lines, while old *carteretiae* have no blackish bars whatever on the breast. There is, however, one New Hanover specimen with only faint remains of these bars, and as most of the others are not with certainty quite adult, I prefer to leave the question of these pigeons unsettled until I have examined a larger series of fully adult examples from New Hanover, and immature ones from New Ireland or New Britain.

Haliastur indus girrenera (Gould). (No. 362.) The typical *girrenera* with snow-white head, neck, and breast, without any dark shaft-lines, was shot on the 9th of February, 1897, in New Hanover.

Digitized by Google

Astur dampieri (?) Two skins (Nos. 445 and 458) from New Hanover cannot be identified with certainty, as they are both immature. The one, evidently a female, has the underparts barred buffy-white and rufous brown, but on the breast and thighs some uniform cinnamon rufous feathers are appearing, showing what the final plumage will be like. The wing is 245 mm. long. The others, a male, wing 210 mm., is white below with rusty brown spots. These birds must belong to the *A. etorques* group, and, if *A. dampieri* is a valid form, probably belong to the latter.

Baza bismarcki, Sharpe. (Nos. 530, 529), both from Expedition Bay, will, I think, belong to the bird named *Baza bismarcki* by Dr. Sharpe. One has the bars on the breast and abdomen ashy-grey, the other brownish-black. Both, however, are remarkable for the width of the bars below, which are fully 7 to 10 mm. wide, and the colour of the under wing-coverts, which are white with only a buff tinge, not deep ferruginous buff. The axillaries are barred as in *B. reinwardti*. "Iris yellow," wings 330 mm.

Ninox variegata (Q. and G.). Nos. 394, 435.) Two skins, one with more irregular bars, apparently less aged. Rare in collections.

Rallina tricolor, Gray. (Nos. 368, 467.) "Iris red." Two New Hanover skins are remarkable for their rather short primaries, which hardly exceed the secondaries in length. There are, however, skins from Dutch New Guinea, in Mr. Rothschild's museum, which closely approach them, and there is one from New Britain in the British Museum, which seems to be intermediate. The time seems not yet ripe for discussing the various subspecies of this rail.

Amaurornis moluccana (Wall.). (Nos. 398, 456.) Two skins from New Hanover are rather deep slaty-grey below, and one has an enormous beak (fully 38 mm.). It may be another subspecies, but no final conclusion can be made without further material.

Hypotaenidia philippensis (L.). (Nos. 413, 382.) This widespread species was also met in New Hanover.

Poliolimnas cinereus (V.). (No. 381.) One skin from New Hanover, the back rather rufous.

Digitized by Google

Porphyrio calvus (*? ellioti* = *neobritannicus*). (Nos. 423, 451). Two skins, one from New Hanover, another from St. Gabriel, look very different at the first sight, the former having the chest blue, the latter distinctly greenish. These characters may be local, but they are probably due to age. As Messrs. Meyer and Wiglesworth truly say: "Local races exist in this group, but individual variation is so great, that it obliterates the characters which are bound to the locality." Thus the distribution *P. calvus* is best described as follows: "From Java and South-East Borneo to Australia, Fiji, Samoa, and New Zealand, varying locally in almost every spot."

Excalfactoria lepida Hartl. (No. 389.) One male from New Hanover, of this rare little game-bird, which is hitherto only known from New Britain. The breast is slaty-blue, but with a few small red spots.

Megapodius eremita, Hartl. (No. 334.) One adult bird from Kung, New Hanover. Messrs. Cabanis and Reichenow have named the New Hanover bird *M. hueskeri*, but I do not see how it differs from specimens from the Solomons and New Britain, and that they are the same species is also the opinion of Mr. Grant. (Cat. B. Brit. Mus. xxii. pp. 452, 453.)

Besides the very interesting land-birds, which are enumerated above, some of the widespread shore- and water-birds, which are of little interest for zoo-geographical studies. They are: *Esacus magnirostris*, *Actitis hypoleucus*, *Heteractitis incanus*, *Anas superciliosa*, and four species of herons.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX II.

BIRDS OF PARADISE COLLECTED BY CAPTAIN CAYLEY WEBSTER.

BY THE HONBLE. WALTER ROTHSCHILD.

I have been requested by Captain Webster to give a list and account of the birds of paradise collected by him. Before doing so I must say that though he got on his several journeys a considerable number of species, he was so much hindered by bad cartridges and opposition, both on the part of the natives and others, that he could not do himself justice. On his first expedition to German New Guinea he collected the following species:—

1. *Aclurocdus buccoides geislerorum.*
2. *Ptilorhis intercedens.*
3. *Cicinnurus regius.*
4. *Diphyllodes magnificus.*
5. *Paradisea minor finschi.*
6. *Paradisea augustaevictoriae.*
7. *Paradisea guilielmi.*
8. *Manucodia atra.*

I have nothing to report on these except that most of the specimens of *D. magnificus* belong to the form named *septentrionalis.*

In Etna Bay and Triton Bay the species collected were:—

1. *Ptilorhis magnifica.*
2. *Cicinnurus regius.*
3. *Paradisea minor minor.*
4. *Manucodia atra.*
5. *Manucodia chalybata.*

Digitized by Google

In the Aru Islands Captain Webster procured—

1. *Paradisea apoda* ♀.
2. *Manucodia atra.*
3. *Cicinnurus regius.*
4. *Aeluroedus melanotis melanotis.*

As there were no new species and few rare ones among these three collections, I am at a loss to say anything about them, except that the good skins and fine condition of the specimens show what might have been done under more favourable circumstances.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX III.

LIST OF NEW LEPIDOPTERA DISCOVERED BY CAPTAIN H. C. WEBSTER.

LYCAENIDAE.

Thysonotis peri Smith, Nov. Zool. i. p. 590 n. 9 (1894) (Sattelberg).

——— phroso, id., l.c. iv. p. 313 n. 2 (1897) (Etna Bay).

——— hanno, id., Ann. Mag. N.H. (6) xiv. p. 25 n. 1 (1894) (N. Britain).

——— hamilcar, id., l.c. n. 2 (1894) (N. Britain).

——— esme, id.. l.c. xiii. p. 501 n. 8 (1894) (N. Britain).

Epimastidia albocoerulea, id., l.c. xiii. p. 501 n. 7 (1894) (N. Britain).

Lampides eclectus, id., Nov. Zool. i. p. 589 n. 8 (1894) (Sattelberg).

Hypochryrops honora, id., l.c. v. p. 103 n. 3 (1898) (N. Hanover).

PIERIDAE.

Delias georgiana, id., l.c. xv. p. 229 (1895) (N. Georgia).

——— ladas, id., Nov. Zool. i. p. 585 n. 1 (1894) (Sattelberg).

——— geraldina, id., l.c. n. 2 (1894) (Sattelberg).

Appias gisco, id., Ann. Mag. N.H. (6) xv. p. 229 (1895) (N. Georgia).

PAPILIONIDAE.

Papilio websteri, id., l.c. (6) xiii. p. 497 (1894) (N. Britain).

——— euchenor neohannoveranus Rothsch., Nov. Zool. v. p. 217 (1898) (N. Hanover).

Digitized by Google

Papilio ulysses gabrielis, id., l.c. p. 217 (1898) (St. Gabriel, Admiralty Is.).
——— codrus auratus, id., l.c. p. 218 (1898) (St. Gabriel).
——— segonax tenebrionis, id., l.c. ii. p. 427 (1895) (N. Georgia).
Papilio sarpeden impar Rothsch., l.c. p. 443 (1895) (N. Georgia).

NYMPHALIDAE.

Asthipa melusine Smith, Nov. Zool. i. p. 586 (1894) (Sattelberg).
Vadebra eboraci, id., Ann. Mag., N.H. (6) xiii. p. 498 n. 2 (1894) (N. Britain and Duke of York).
——— lacon, id., l.c. p. 499 n. 3 (1894) (N. Britain).
Cethosia gabrielis Rothsch., Nov. Zool. v. p. 218 (1898) (St. Gabriel).
Charaxes latona diana, id., l.c. p. 96 (1898) (N. Hanover).
Mynes websteri, Smith, Nov. Zool. i. p. 586 n. 4 (1894) (Sattelberg).
——— cottonis, id., Ann. Mag. N.H. (6) xiii. p. 499 n. 4 (1894) (N. Britain).
Elymnias melanippe, id., Nov. Zool. i. p. 588 n. 5 (1894) (Sattelberg).
——— erastus, id., l.c. p. 588 n. 6 (1897) (Sattelberg).
Mycalesis barbara, id., l.c. p. 589 n. 7 (1894) (Sattelberg).
——— maura, id., Ann. Mag. N.H. (6) xiii. p. 500 n. 5 (1894) (N. Britain).
——— matho, id. l.c. p. 501 n. 6 (1894) (N. Britain).

AGARISTIDAE.

Burgena chalybeata Rothsch., Nov. Zool. iii. p. 39 (1896) (N. Britain).

GEOMETRIDAE.

Milionia assimilis Rothsch., l.c. iv. p. 510 (1897) (N. Hanover).
——— websteri, id., l.c. p. 511 (1897) (N. Hanover).

Digitized by Google

SOME NEW COLEOPTERA DISCOVERED BY CAPTAIN H. C. WEBSTER.

CERAMBYCIDAE.

Nemophas websteri Jord., Nov. Zool. v. p. 419 n. 2 (1898).

♂ ♀. Supra et infra dense corallino tomentosus; antennis nigris, articulo 1° sat dense punctato; elytris sex fasciis transversis nudis nitidis atris punctatis oratis, 1ª angusta subbasali postscutellari, versus humeros saepe obsoleta (*spec. typ.*), 2ª paulo latiore, 3ia submediana et 4ª postmediana latioribus, duabus posticis angustis, plus minusve irregularibus, saepe conjunctis; pedibus nigris, punctatis, femoribus parum corallino tomentosis.

Hab. New Hanover, Bismarck Archipelago, March and April, 1897; a series of both sexes.

Easily distinguishable from *N. grayi* (1859), Southern Moluccas, by the entirely coralline red upper and under surfaces, the number and position of the black bands on the elytra, and the puncturation of the legs and first antennal joint. A central spot on the pronotum and the upper side of thoracical spines are often denuded.

Nemophas cyanescens, id., l. c. n. 3.

♂ ♀. Formae timorensi *batoceroides* dictae similis, sed prothorace supra et infra nigro, subtilissime brunnescente pubescente; elytris nigro-viridi-cyaneis; processu mesosternali minus elevato cum coxis quatuor posticis nigro, distinguendus

Hab. Kei Toeal, January to March, 1896; 1 ♂, 1 ♀.

Epepeotes websteri, id., l. c. p. 420, n. 4.

♂ ♀. E. niger, lutoso tomentosus. Caput fere nudum occipite sparsim punctulato. Antennarum articulus primus densissime rugulosus, crasse rugoso-punctatus. Pronotum medio sparsim, versus latera parum densius tomentosum, granulatum, medio transverse plicatum. Elytra dimidio basali fortiter sat disperse punctata, humeris granulatis, punctis postice sparsis, margine apicali bispinoso leviter concavo; dense lutoso tomen-

Digitized by Google

tosa, tomento in margine basali fusco, tribus fasciis latis transversis plus minusve irregularibus aequidistantibus denudatis atris nitentibus, postbasali, mediana, postmediana; mediana latus versus latiore guttam lutosam lateralem includente; praeterea maculis irregularibus anteapicalibus etiam denudatis.

Prona facies medio sparsim, lateribus densius lutoso tomentosa. Pedes nigri, punctati, tibiis anticis (♂) infra crasse rugato-granulatis.

♂. Long. proth. 6, elytr. 23 mm.

♀. ,, ,, 5, ,, 20 ,,

♂. Lat. proth. (apice) $7\frac{1}{2}$, elytr. (hum.) $12\frac{1}{2}$ mm.

♀. ,, ,, ,, 7, ,, ,, $10\frac{1}{2}$,,

Hab. New Hanover, March and April, 1897; a series of both sexes.

Varies in size. Easily recognised by the pattern of the elytra, which reminds one of *Nemophas* and also of *Diochares*. The ♂ has the first joint of the anterior tarsi exteriorly triangularly dilated, as is the case in the other species of *Epepeotes*.

ANTHRIBIDAE.

Xenocerus websteri, id., l. c. p. 370, n. 28.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX IV.

TOTAL NUMBER OF SPECIMENS COLLECTED.

Ornithological specimens	850
Lepidoptera	30,000
Coleoptera	50,000
Ethnological	1,800
Cassowaries (two reached England alive)	4
Miscellaneous	450
Total	83,104

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

A.

Abdullah, 225; narrowly escapes death, 227.
Abel, Mr. and Mrs., 252-254; their admirable treatment of natives, 257.
Admiralty Island, 308, 309.
Admiralty Islands, the, 279, 289, 301-319.
Admiralty Islands vocabulary, an, 318.
Aidoema, 210.
Albert Victor Range, part of it identical with so-called Bismarck Mountains, 45, 46.
Alu, 107.
Ambon, bay of, 167.
Ambonese, character of the, 169.
Amboyna, 167.
Amboyna, massacre of, 213.
Ampenan, 159.
Arfours, wild men of the mountains, 213.
Aru, 186, 195.

B.

Bali, 158, 159.
Ballarat, the, P. & O. steamer, 1.
Banda Islands, 171.
Banda Neura, 172.
Batavia, 19, 144-157.
Beavis, Mr. Oliver, discovered murdered, 333-339.
Becke, Mr. Louis, his South Sea stories, 349.
Becker, Mr., assistant of Dr. Kleinschmidt, killed, 267.
Beehives, the, 327.
Betel-nut, manner of eating, 27.
Bishop of Navarre, 244, 245.
Bismarck Mountains, non-existence of, 45, 46.
Bismarck Archipelago, 262, 289.
Blanche Bay, 320, 327.
Boeleleng, 158.
Bokajim, 36.
Bokajim dialect spoken by natives belonging to Oombali, 43.
Bokop, chief of Mioko, 267.
Bougainville, 107, 135, 345.
Boutowing, 24.
Botanical Gardens at Buitzenzorg, 149.
Brandeis, Captain, imperial judge in New Britain, 62; mistaken for a publican, 62-67.
British Atlantic Cable Company, 240.
Buitzenzorg, 149.
Buka natives demoralise the men, 54.
Bullet-proof ointment, native pretends to have discovered, 82.

C.

Cape St. George, 260.
Ceram, 174.
Challenger, H.M.S., 301, 311.
China Straits, 258.

Digitized by Google

Christening, native, 59.
Choiseul, 107, 135.
Cocoanut Island, 102.
Controlleur at Kei Island, 176, 182, 197, 231, 232.
Copra: the dried kernel of the cocoanut, 81.
Cotton, Captain, 1, 34, 54; falls sick, 58.
Coupé, Bishop, head of the Sacred Heart Mission in New Britain, 97-101; history of his mission, 98; his educational system, 101; revisit him, 245.

D.

Dashwood, Judge, 241.
D'Entre Casteaux Group, 260.
Dibbori, 38.
Dobbo, 195.
Duke of York Islands, 266, 267.
Duk-duk, curious ceremony of the, 267-268.
Dumbu, 40, 42, 53.
Dutch flag, 220, 221; inadvisability of distributing it to natives indiscriminately, 233.
Dutch Government agent, his cruelty to Javanese coolies, 19.
Dutch ladies in Java, their costume, 148, 149.

E.

Echidna captured, 39.
Esperanza, fate of the schooner, 119.
Etna Bay, 215, 218, 219, 232.

F.

Fergusson, Mr., murder of, 113.
Finchhafen, original headquarters of New Guinea Company, 31.
logging of a Chinaman by the Dutch Government, 23.
Frederichwilhelmshafen, headquarters of New Guinea Company, 20; Governor's hospitality, 20, 33, 58, 61.
French Catholic Mission, 244, 245.

G.

Gambling, passion of the Chinese for, 20.
Gangloff, M., 283-289, 293.
Gavatu, 350.
Gisser, 174.
Goa, Rajah of, 165.
Goenoeng Rindjani, 163.
Guadalcanar, 350.
Gunong Api, 172.
Guy, Mr., murdered, 108.

H.

Hawthorn Sound, 125.
Head-hunting, 108, 125.
Heckeren, Baron von, 153.
Herbertson, 67, 260, 320.
Herstella, 172.
Hoffmann, a German missionary, 36, 38.

I.

Imbli, 41.
Ingova, chief of Rubiana, 109, 113, 120.
Istana, palace of the Sultan of Johore, 3.
Ivory nut, method of treating, 349.

J.

Java, 19, 144-157.
Javanese, character of, 157.
Javanese coolies, 19.
Jesuit missionaries in the Kei Islands, 191.
Jesu Maria Island, 310, 317.
Jillim, 40, 54.
Jimmy, one of the hunters, 224.
Johnston, boatswain, 223; killed, 228.
Johore, Sultan and palace of, 1-16; crown prince of, his marriage ceremony, 7-9.

K.

Kanau, chief of St. Gabriel, 302.
Kapauer, 174.
Katigot, bay near Saddleberg, 30.

Digitized by Google

Kei Islands, 175, 176; inhabitants of, 181; controlleur of, 176, 182, 197.
Ker, Mr., marine superintendent of the State of Johore, 4.
Kernbach, German recruiting labour for New Guinea, 30.
Kirkhoven, Mr., his plantation of Sinagar: his hospitality, 153.
Kjaputi oil, 176.
Kjomera Bay, 230.
Kleinschmidt, Dr., murdered, 267,
Koninklijke Paketvaart Maatschappij, 157.
Kolbe, Mrs., her plantation in New Britain, 68, 87, 261, 328.
Kung, 279, 289, 290-298.
Kuras, wrecked off, 321.
Kwato, 252-254.
Kyamaka Bay, 217.

L.

Lakahia, the people of, 230.
Lark, the schooner, 141.
La Vandola Island, 317.
Lennell, killed, 224.
Lolo, 244.
Lombok, 159-163; Sultan of, 159-160; self-immolation of women in, 160-163.
London Missionary Society at Lolo, 244, 252.
Lubeck, ss., 19, 58, 62.

M.

Macassar, 115, 163-166.
Macgregor, Sir William, 246, 250, 251.
Malita, 114.
Man Island, 280.
Mandoliana, 135.
Marquis de Ré Expedition, history of, 102, 260.
Mathias, island of, 279.
Matupi, island of, 81.
Mausoleum Island, 281.
Melville Island, 239.
Merrie England, steam yacht, 250.
Minjem, the river, 36, 39, 41.
Mioko, 262, 263-278, 279.
Missions, 97-101, 244, 245; error of theological divergencies among, 244.
Moresby, Captain, 258.
Mount Victoria, 251.
"Mula Copa," his son visits the ship, 346.
Murdered Englishmen, list of, 130.
Musgrave, Mr., 250.

N.

Navarre, Bishop of, 244, 245.
New Britain, arrival at, 62; troubles in, 81; heavy loads of women, 87; dirt and ugliness of natives, 87; native festivity in, 88-93; set sail for again, 257; considered to be part of New Guinea, 260; am reputed to be a wizard throughout, 262.
New Georgia, 107, 113, 141.
New Guinea, first arrival in, 20; natives of, 27; their legends, 28, 29; their love of red paint and salt, 52, 53; New Guinea revisited, 210; probable extinction of races in, 357.
New Hanover, 279, 282-298.
New Ireland, considered a part of New Guinea, 260; pass by it, 280, 281 wrecked off, 320.
Nielson, Mr., 348.
Nissam, 333.
Nordup, 328.
North Island, 258.
Nusa Sanga, 107.

O.

Obsidian, use of, by natives, 309
Onithoptera Paradisea, 23.
Oot Island, 182.
Orang Kaya, 186.
Outuan, 267, 268, 273.
Owen Stanley Range, the, 251.

Digitized by Google

P.

PALMERSTON, 239-241.
Palmistry, 293.
Painga Panga, 113.
Papuan Gulf, 251.
Parkinson, Mrs., her heroic defence of her house, 75, 76.
Pearing, Sergeant, 34.
Piano, native views on the Governor's, 34.
Pichalew, 309.
Poisonous fish, 273.
Pollard, Captain, of H.M.S. *Wallaroo*, 350, 351.
Po-po, 125, 133,
Port Darwin, 234, 239, 241, 243.
Port Hunter, 277.
Port Moresby, 244, 245, 250.
Postholder at Great Kei, 185, 189.
Postholder at Dobbo, 196.

R.

RAJAH BAI made a prisoner, 231.
Rajah Prumpoean: a woman chief, 211, 212.
Ralum, 75, 87, 328.
Ranga, the boy, 57.
Rangoon, 225.
Rapid, H.M.S., puts us in quarantine, 347.
Recruiting native labour, method of, 274.
Red paint, native love of, 53.
Richter, Mr., death of, 33.
Rohilla, the, P. and O. steamer, 1.
Royal bath: marriage of the Crown Prince of Johore, 9.
Rubiana, 107, 113, 346, 347.

S.

SADDLEBERG, 30.
St. Andrew's Straits, 310.
St. Gabriel, 302-307.
St. George's Channel, 260, 279, 333.
St. George's Island, 310.
Salak Mountains, 150.
Sam, our man, 225; killed, 228.
Samarai, 250, 252.
Sandfly, H.M.S., crew of, murdered 135.
Sandy Cape, 350.
Savo, 350.
Schouten, discoverer of the Admiralty Islands, 301.
Schultze, Mr., assistant of Dr. Kleinschmidt, killed, 267.
Schultze, Mr., manager of a German Samoan Company in Mioko, 262, 278.
Sear, 59.
Sekar, 174.
Self-immolation of women, 160-163.
Senta, schooner, attack on, 61, 289.
Shortland, 107, 141.
Simbang, scene of some of our best collections, 23.
Sinagar, plantation of, 150-153.
Singapore, 1, 144.
Sir Charles Hardy Islands, murder in, 333-339.
Skroe, 174.
Soekaboemi, 154.
Soerabaja, 157, 158.
Solomon Islands, 107; discovery of, 134; visit, 345.
"Spot," my fox terrier, lost, 256, 257.
Steffan Straits, 281.
Stephensort, headquarters of the Astrolabe Bay Company, 20, 38, 58.
Sydney, arrival at, 143.
Sydney Bulletin, amusing cartoon in, 244.

T.

TANJONG Priok, 144.
Tattooing of a woman, 248-251.
Thursday Island, 239, 243.
Tjiliong, 150.
Toeal, 175, 176-182, 184, 191, 192, 232, 239; I lodge in the prison at, 177; Rajah of, 193, 194.

Digitized by Google

Torres Straits, 239.
Triton Bay, 212, 217.
Tunku Makota, Crown Prince of Johore, 3; his marriage, 7-9.

V.

VITTIB, 38; natives accuse us of killing their pig, 57.

W.

WAIKATU, 311.
Wajang, or Javanese theatre, 154.
Wallaroo, H.M.S., 350.
Wamma, 195.
Wassa, 209,
Waterloo, great Dutch victory of, 148.
Webster, Captain Cayley, starts on his first expedition, 1; stays with the Sultan of Johore; 2-16; interferes on behalf of Javanese coolies, 19; buys a boy who is in trouble with his tribe, 29; starts for the interior, 35; discovers non-existence of Bismarck Mountains, 46; fights the natives about a pig, 57; attends a savage festivity, 88; visits a native house of mourning, 120; finds himself alone among hostile natives, 142; starts for his second expedition, 144; entertained by Mr. Kirkhoven, 150, 151; attends a Javanese theatre, 154, 155; writes to purchase a yacht, 157; negotiates with two brothers who have the same wife, 166; lodges in a prison, 176, 177; performs conjuring tricks before the natives, 189; is bitten by a dangerous insect, 192, 193; interviews the Rajah of Toeal, 193; inquires into the murder of a Chinaman, 200; visits a native burial ground, 208; is charged with messages to an imaginary race, 209; Chinese servant attempts to murder him, 210; visits a woman chief, 211; is attacked, 224; capture and releases the chief's son, 231; again performs conjuring tricks, 261; nearly killed by a poisonous fish, 273; notices natives studying palmistry, 291-293; bargains with a grasping native wood carver, 311; effects a reconciliation between two hostile chiefs, 328; finds an Englishman murdered, 333; the yacht put in quarantine, 347; end of his second expedition, 351,
Wickham, Mr., 113, 348.
Wiengi: attack by natives, 57.
Wilhelmina, H.M.S., hospitality of, 165.
Woman chief, 211, 212.
Woodford, Mr., Commissioner of the Solomon Islands, 347, 350.

Y.

YACHT arrives, 194; meets us at Kwato, 255; put in quarantine, 347; condemned and abandoned, 350, 351.
Ysabel, Dutch Government steamer, 23, 107, 125, 135.
Yule Island, 244.

Digitized by Google

The Gresham Press.
UNWIN BROTHERS.
WOKING AND LONDON.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, SANTA CRUZ

This book is due on the last **DATE** stamped below.

50*m*-1,'69(J5643s8)2373—3A,1

IRLF

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google